

TEACH
YOURSELF
BOOKS

MODERN GREEK

MODERN GREEK

S.A.SOFRONIOU

With a phonetic introduction by

A GRAMMAR OF MODERN GREEK ON A PHONETIC BASIS

Published by The University of London Press

The intention of all concerned with the writing and preparation of this book is to provide a standard self-teaching grammar of the contemporary Greek language. Other volumes in the series provide complementary studies in both Classical and New Testament Greek.

TEACH YOURSELF MODERN GREEK

The Modern Greek language is spoken by about eight million people inhabiting mainly two states, Greece and Cyprus. It constitutes the present stage in the natural development of the language from classical Greek through koine or New Testament Greek and Byzantine or Medieval Greek to the present day. Like all languages it has undergone various changes in both pronunciation, grammar and vocabulary throughout its long historical course. The main features of Modern Greek outlined in this book have been statistically determined from samples of both present-day Athenian speech and writing contained mainly in novels dealing with contemporary Athenian life.



The English Universities Press Ltd
St. Paul's House Warwick Lane
London EC4

THE TEACH YOURSELF BOOKS

MODERN GREEK

Uniform with this volume and
in the same series

Teach Yourself Afrikaans
Teach Yourself Arabic
Teach Yourself Colloquial Arabic
Teach Yourself Bengali
Teach Yourself Chinese
Teach Yourself Czech
Teach Yourself Danish
Teach Yourself Dutch
Teach Yourself English for Swahili-Speaking People
Teach Yourself English Grammar
Teach Yourself Good English
Teach Yourself Old English
Teach Yourself Esperanto
Teach Yourself Finnish
Teach Yourself French
Teach Yourself Everyday French
Teach Yourself French Grammar
Teach Yourself German
Teach Yourself German Grammar
Teach Yourself More German
The Teach Yourself German Reader
Teach Yourself Greek
Teach Yourself Modern Greek
Teach Yourself New Testament Greek
Teach Yourself Hebrew
Teach Yourself Icelandic
Teach Yourself Indonesian
Teach Yourself Irish
Teach Yourself Italian
Teach Yourself Japanese
Teach Yourself Latin
Teach Yourself Latvian
Teach Yourself Malay
Teach Yourself Maltese
Teach Yourself Norwegian
Teach Yourself Modern Persian
Teach Yourself Polish
Teach Yourself Portuguese
Teach Yourself Russian
Teach Yourself Samoan
Teach Yourself Serbo-Croat
Teach Yourself Spanish
Teach Yourself Everyday Spanish
Teach Yourself Swahili
Teach Yourself Swedish
Teach Yourself Turkish
Teach Yourself Urdu
Teach Yourself Welsh

TEACH YOURSELF MODERN GREEK

by

S. A. SOFRONIOU, M.A.

with a Phonetic Introduction by
J. T. PRING, M.A.



THE ENGLISH UNIVERSITIES PRESS LTD
ST PAUL'S HOUSE WARWICK LANE
LONDON EC4

First printed 1962
This impression 1965

Copyright © 1962
The English Universities Press Ltd

*Printed and bound in Great Britain
for the English Universities Press Ltd
Butler & Tanner Ltd, Frome and London*

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION	ix
PHONETIC INTRODUCTION	11
The Sounds of Greek; Accent and Quality; The Greek Alphabet; Pronunciation of the Alphabet; Diacritic Marks and Punctuation; Transliteration; Phrasing; Pronunciation Exercises.	
PARTS OF SPEECH	23
PART I: VARIABLE WORDS	
NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES	27
Exercise 1	
'THIS' AND 'THAT'	31
Exercises 2 and 3	
PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES	34
Exercises 4 and 5	
PRONOUNS: 'MY', 'YOUR', ETC.	39
Exercise 6	
PRONOUNS: 'MINE', 'YOURS', ETC.	42
Exercise 7	
GENITIVE OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES	44
Exercise 8	
GENITIVE PLURAL	48
Exercise 9	
ACCUSATIVE	51
Exercise 10	
ACCUSATIVE PLURAL	55
Exercises 11 and 12	

CONTENTS

TELLING THE TIME	58
Exercises 13 and 14	
COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES	61
Exercise 15	
SUMMARY OF PRINCIPAL FORMS OF NOUNS	64
VERBS	65
Active Verbs; Present and Future; Indefinite	
Exercises 16, 17, 18 and 19	
PERSON AND NUMBER	74
Exercises 20 and 21	
PAST TENSE	79
Exercises 22, 23 and 24	
IMPERFECT	85
Exercise 25	
USE OF <i>va</i>	88
Exercises 26 and 27	
PERFECT TENSES	91
Exercise 28	
IMPERATIVE	93
Exercises 29 and 30	
PRONOUNS: 'HIM', 'HER', 'IT', 'THEM', 'ME', 'YOU', 'US'	97
Exercises 31 and 32	
SUMMARY OF PRINCIPAL FORMS OF ACTIVE VERBS	104
PASSIVE VERBS	105
Exercises 33 and 34	
MIXED VERBS	113
Exercise 35	
PRONOUNS: 'I', 'YOU', 'HE', ETC.	115
Exercise 36	
SUMMARY OF PRONOUNS	118

CONTENTS

PART II: INVARIABLE WORDS

ADVERBS	121
Exercises 37, 38 and 39	
PARTICIPLES	127
Exercises 40 and 41	
PASSIVE PARTICIPLES	130
Exercises 42 and 43	
ADVERBIALS	133
Exercise 44	
INTERROGATIVE ADVERBS	135
Exercises 45 and 46	
CONJUNCTIONS	137
Exercises 47 and 48	
THE USE OF <i>av</i>	141
FURTHER CONJUNCTIONS	142
Exercises 49 and 50	
CONNECTIVES	144
VERBAL PARTICLES	145
Exercise 51	
PREPOSITIONS	149
Exercises 52 and 53	
DETERMINERS	152
Exercises 54 and 55	
SUFFIXES	155
COMBINATION OF WORDS	158
IDIOMS	160
GENERAL EXERCISES	162
56. A meeting in the street	
57. A trip to the islands	
58. An evening out	
59. Asking the way	
60. Finding a flat	

CONTENTS

GENERAL EXERCISES—*continued*

- 61. Changing money
- 62. At the restaurant
- 63. A day by the sea
- 64. The pilot Nagel (N. Kavvadias)
- 65. Mike (K. Kariotakis)
- 66. Alexandrian kings (K. Kavafis)

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

GREEK-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

ENGLISH-GREEK VOCABULARY

177

209

221

INTRODUCTION

The Modern Greek language is spoken by about eight million people inhabiting mainly two states, Greece and Cyprus.

It constitutes the present stage in the natural development of the language from classical Greek through *koine* or New Testament Greek and Byzantine or Medieval Greek to the present day. Like all languages it has undergone various changes in both pronunciation, grammar and vocabulary throughout its long historical course.

The idiom of present-day Athens has been used as the model of the modern language which is described in this book. It must be borne in mind, however, that some people use dialectal forms (especially in Cyprus, Crete and Northern Greece) as well as forms belonging to previous stages in the development of the language. The latter forms constitute the so-called *katharevousa* language which is used mainly in the writing of official documents, some school-books and partly in newspapers.

The grammar of any language is like the map of a country. It attempts to portray all the main features of a territory but it cannot describe it completely. That is why exceptions are such a common and necessary part of any grammar. The main features of Modern Greek outlined in this book have been statistically determined from samples of both present-day Athenian speech and writing contained mainly in novels dealing with contemporary Athenian life.

The amount of space devoted to different forms, and the order in which they are dealt with has also been mainly determined by their relative frequency of occurrence. It is hoped that this will benefit the student by directing his

INTRODUCTION

attention and effort to the fundamental elements of the language.

It is a pleasant duty to thank Mr. Julian Pring not only for his Phonetic Introduction but also for his constant and fruitful guidance, criticism and help throughout the writing of this book; Dr. David Phillips has also kindly put at my disposal his great knowledge of both demotic Greek and linguistics.

S. A. SOFRONIOU

PHONETIC INTRODUCTION

Modern Greek is written with the same alphabet as ancient Greek, and the main body of vocabulary has been handed down from classical times with its spelling virtually unchanged. Naturally the pronunciation has altered in the course of time. But nobody can know what classical Greek sounded like, and there is no reason to suppose that the language sounded any "better" than it does today.

Students of Greek must learn to read and write the alphabet as quickly as possible. This is by no means difficult for English speakers. Almost all the sounds are easy to make; and when once you have learnt the phonetic values of the letters, you can read the written language automatically, because the spelling is logical and always preserves those same values.

In order to give you a starting-point, the Greek orthography in this chapter is accompanied by a simple transcription into Roman letters; and the sounds are described in detail, with reference to their nearest English equivalents. The letters of this transcription are always enclosed within square brackets. Of course, this method cannot tell you accurately enough what the quality of the sounds is like. It is very important for you to listen to the speech of a native Greek as soon as you can, so that you may check and amplify what you have read in the book by what you hear in real life. In the long run you can only acquire a Greek accent by imitating Greeks.

Pay careful attention to the exercises in this chapter, because from here onwards only the Greek spelling will be given, and you will not have a phonetic transcription to help you.

THE SOUNDS OF GREEK

Vowels

[a]	similar to <i>o</i>	in <i>love</i> .
[e]	„ „	<i>e</i> in <i>sell</i> .
[i]	„ „	<i>i</i> in <i>police</i> .
[o]	„ „	<i>o</i> in <i>got</i> .
[u]	„ „	<i>oo</i> in <i>root</i> .

Consonants

[b d f g k m n p t v z]	as in English.	
[dh]	similar to	<i>th</i> in <i>this</i> .
[gh]	„ „	<i>g</i> in Spanish <i>Aragon</i> (phonetic symbol γ).
[kh]	„ „	<i>ch</i> in German <i>ich</i> or <i>buch</i> (phonetic symbols κ , χ).
[l]	„ „	<i>l</i> in <i>least</i> (not <i>l</i> in <i>tall</i>).
[r]	lightly rolled, as in Italian or Scottish.	
[s]	similar to	<i>s</i> in <i>sit</i> (not <i>s</i> in <i>was</i>).
[th]	„ „	<i>th</i> in <i>thick</i> .
[y]	„ „	<i>y</i> in <i>you</i> .

Note (1): [p t k] should not be given the aspiration, or slight puff of breath before a vowel, which is usual in English.

Note (2): [n] before [k], [kh] and [g] has the same quality as in *ankle*, *angle*, etc.

Note (3): [kh] is also the sound of *ch* in Scottish *loch*. [gh] bears the same relation to [kh] as [g] does to [k].

ACCENT AND QUALITY

Every word bears a stress-accent on one of its syllables. In this transcription, the vowel of each stressed syllable is

printed in *italic*. *Do not lengthen the stressed vowel as much as you would in English*. All Greek vowels, whether stressed or not, are relatively short, and preserve more or less the same quality in all positions. *Do not weaken unstressed vowels as you would in English*. In Greek every word is uttered precisely and swiftly, giving each syllable its full value without drawling or dawdling over it. Say the word [maria] (*Mary*). The first and third vowels must not be weakened as in English *Maria*. Nor is the [i] lengthened. In [monotonos] (*monotonous*) each [o] has the same quality, although only one is stressed. Practise the following: [sinonimos] (*synonymous*); [paralitikos] (*paralytic*); [katastrofi] (*catastrophe*); [filosofos] (*philosopher*); [politikos] (*political*); [analisis] (*analysis*); [ikonomia] (*economy*); [episkopos] (*bishop*); [ipothesis] (*hypothesis*); [thermometron] (*thermometer*).

Pay special attention to final [e] and [o]. The word [ne] (*yes*) must not sound like English *nay*, but like *ne* in *never*. The second syllable of [vuno] (*mountain*) must not sound like English *know*, but like *kno* in *knot*.

THE GREEK ALPHABET

A	α	ἄλφα	[alfa]
B	β	βῆτα	[vita]
Γ	γ	γάμμα	[ghama]
Δ	δ	δέλτα	[dharma]
E	ϵ	ἐπίλω	[epsilon]
Z	ζ	ζῆτα	[zita]
H	η	ἦτα	[ita]
Θ	θ	θῆτα	[thita]
I	ι	ἰῶτα	[iota]
K	κ	κάππα	[kapa]
Λ	λ	λάμ(β)δα	[lamdha]

M	μ	μῶ	[mi]
N	ν	νῶ	[ni]
Ξ	ξ	ξῖ	[ksi]
O	ο	ὀμικρον	[omikron]
Π	π	πῖ	[pi]
P	ρ	ρῶ	[ro]
Σ	σ ς*	σῖγμα	[sighma]
T	τ	ταῦ	[taf]
Υ	υ	ὕψιλον	[ipsilon]
Φ	φ	φῖ	[fi]
X	χ	χῖ	[khi]
Ψ	ψ	ψῖ	[psi]
Ω	ω	ὦμέγα	[omegha]

* Used only at the end of a word.

PRONUNCIATION OF THE ALPHABET

α	[a]	ἄρωμα [aroma] <i>scent</i> .
β	[v]	βίβλος [vivlos] <i>Bible</i> .
γ	[gh]	before α, ο, ω, ου and consonants: γάτα [ghata] <i>cat</i> .
	[y]	before ε, αι, η, ι, υ, ει, οι: γένος [yenos] <i>genus</i> .
δ	[dh]	δράμα [dhrama] <i>drama</i> .
ε	[e]	ἔρως [eros] <i>love</i> .
ζ	[z]	ζήλος [zilos] <i>zeal</i> .
η	[i]	ἡδονή [idhoni] <i>pleasure</i> .
θ	[th]	θέατρο [theatro] <i>theatre</i> .
ι	[i]	ιδέα [idhea] <i>idea</i> .
κ	[k]	κεφάλι [kefali] <i>head</i> .
λ	[l]	λίθος [lithos] <i>stone</i> .
μ	[m]	μικρός [mikros] <i>little</i> .
ν	[n]	νέος [neos] <i>new, young</i> .
	[ks]	ξύλο [ksilo] <i>wood</i> .

ο	[o]	ὀκτώ [okto] <i>eight</i> .
π	[p]	πολύ [poli] <i>much</i> .
ρ	[r]	ρόλος [rolos] <i>role</i> .
σ	[z]	before β, γ, δ, ζ, (λ), μ, ν, ρ: κόσμος [kozmos] <i>world</i> .
	[s]	elsewhere: σειρά [sira] <i>series</i> .
τ	[t]	τραγωδία [traghodia] <i>tragedy</i> .
υ	[i]	ὕπνος [ipnos] <i>sleep</i> .
φ	[f]	φάρμακο [farmako] <i>medicine</i> .
χ	[kh]	before α, ο, ω, ου and consonants: χορός [khoros] <i>chorus, dance</i> .
		As in German <i>ich</i> before ε, αι, η, ι, υ, ει, οι: χημεία [khimía] <i>chemistry</i> .
ψ	[ps]	ψυχή [psikhi] <i>soul</i> .
ω	[o]	ώρα [ora] <i>hour</i> .

Apart from the above, certain groups of letters have special values:

αι	[e]	αισθητικός [esthitikos] <i>aesthetic</i> .
ει	[i]	ειρωνία [ironia] <i>irony</i> .
οι	[i]	οικονομία [ikonomia] <i>economy</i> .
ου	[u]	οὐτοπία [utopia] <i>utopia</i> .
αυ	[af]	before θ, κ, ξ, π, σ, τ, φ, χ, ψ: αὐτόματος [aftomatos] <i>automatic</i> .
	[av]	elsewhere: Αὐγουστος [avghustos] <i>August</i> .
ευ	[ef]	before θ, κ, ξ, π, σ, τ, φ, χ, ψ: εὐκάλυπτος [efkaliptos] <i>eucalyptus</i> .
	[ev]	elsewhere: Εὐρώπη [evropi] <i>Europe</i> .
γγ	[ng]	Ἀγγλία [anglia] <i>England</i> .
γκ	[g]	when initial: γκαμήλα [gamila] <i>camel</i> .
	[ng]	when medial: ἄγκυρα [angira] <i>anchor</i> .
γξ	[nks]	φάλαγξ [falanks] <i>phalanx</i> .
γχ	[nkh]	μελαγχολία [melankholia] <i>melancholy</i> .

- μπ [b] when initial: *μπύρα* [bira] *beer*.
 [mb] when medial: *Ὀλύμπιος* [olimbos] *Olympus*.
 ντ [d] when initial: *τομάτα* [domata] *tomato*.
 [nd] when medial: *κέντρο* [kentro] *centre*.
 τζ [dz] *τζάκι* [dzaki] *hearth*.

Note. The pronunciation of γκ, μπ, ντ in the middle of a word may vary according to the particular word, and from one speaker to another. Thus the nasal element is sometimes omitted, leaving simply [g, b, d]. More rarely they are pronounced as [nk, mp, nt]. You can only learn these variations by experience.

With extremely few exceptions, a doubled consonant letter (apart from γγ) is pronounced as if it were single. Thus *Ἄννα Anne* is [ana], not [anna] as in Italian.

DIACRITIC MARKS

Almost every word (unless written in capitals) has an accent over the vowel of its stressed syllable. There are three accents: *à, á, ã*. You can ignore the difference between them; only their position is important.

An initial vowel, and sometimes initial ρ, bears one of two "breathings": *á, ã*. These signs can be ignored.

The diaeresis is used to separate two letters which would otherwise have formed a group. Compare *καιρός* [keros] *weather*, and *Κάιρο* [kairo] *Cairo* (see p. 15).

PUNCTUATION

The comma and full stop are as in English. A raised dot (·) is the colon, and (;) is the question mark.

TRANSLITERATION

The connection between Greek words and their English derivatives is often very close, in form as well as in meaning. It may help you to bear in mind the usual way in which the Greek letters are transliterated in our own spelling. The following list gives some of the usual equivalents.

Greek letter	Usual English equivalent
η	e
υ	y
ω	o
αι	ae, e
ει	i, e
οι	oe, e
ου	u
β	b
γ	g
γκ, γγ	ng
κ	c
ρ-	rh-
φ	ph
χ	ch
(^ˆ)	h-

Study the relation of spelling in these examples:

χορός	chorus	σχολείο	school
πολύ	(poly-)	εἰδωλόν	idol
βίος	(bio-)	αἰσθητικός	aesthetic
ὑπνος	(hypnotic)	Κύπρος	Cyprus
μῦθος	myth	ρυθμός	rhythm
βίβλος	Bible	ὕγιεινός	hygienic

PHRASING

In ordinary speech, words are grouped together in short phrases. These are, phonetically, single units, and should be said as if they formed one word. Examples of such units are: article with noun, noun with possessive pronoun, negative particle with verb, etc. When we speak English the stress-accent falls mainly on *content-words* (nouns, verbs, adjectives, etc.) rather than on *form-words* (articles, conjunctions, prepositions, etc.). The same applies to Greek, where form-words are usually treated as unemphatic, even when they bear a written accent.

Practise the following:

Mary is at home.

ἡ Μαρία εἶναι στό σπίτι.
[imaria ine stospiti.]

didn't you see her hat?

δέν εἶδες τό καπέλλο της;
[dhenidhes tokapelotis?]

will you go on foot?

θά πᾶτε μέ τά πόδια;
[thapate metapodhia?]

please give it to me.

σέ παρακαλῶ νά μοῦ τό δώσεις.
[separakalo namutodhosis.]

I like bathing by moonlight.

μοῦ ἀρέσει νά κολυμπῶ μέ τό φεγγάρι.
[muaresi nakolimbo metofengari.]

Certain assimilations of sound may occur between adjacent words within a group:

Final *ς* is pronounced [z] if the next word begins with β, γ, δ, ζ, (λ), μ, ν, ρ, e.g. τῆς Μαρίας [tizmarias] *Mary's*.

When final *ν* is in contact with an initial stop consonant, the following changes result:

ν-κ [ng] στὸν κήπο [stongipo] *in the garden*.

ν-μπ [mb] ἂν μπορῶ [amboro] *if I can*.

ν-ξ [ngz] σὰν ξύλο [sangzilo] *like wood*.

ν-π [mb] δέν πειράζει [dhembirazi] *it doesn't matter*.

ν-τ [nd] ἐν τάξει [endaksi] *all right*.

ν-τσ [ndz] στήν τσάντα της [stindzandatis] *in her bag*.

ν-ψ [mbz] τῶν ψυχῶν [tombzikhon] (*All souls' (day)*).

PRONUNCIATION EXERCISES

From page 30.

Ἡ μητέρα εἶναι καλή.

[imitera ine kali.]

Τό ἀμάξι εἶναι πολύ μεγάλο.

[toamaksi ine poli meghalo.]

Ἡ νύχτα εἶναι θαυμάσια.

[inikta ine thavmasia.]

Τό μεγάλο μπάρ εἶναι γεμάτο.

[tomeghalo bar ine yemato.]

Ὁ πατέρας εἶναι πολύ καλός.

[opateras ine poli kalos.]

Εἶναι ἓνα ὠραῖο κορίτσι.

[ine enaoreo koritsi.]

Εἶναι μιὰ πολύ καλή μητέρα.

[ine myapoli kali mitera.]

Εἶναι ἓνας πολύ καλός ἄνθρωπος.

[ine enaspoli kalos anthropos.]

Ἡ ζωή εἶναι δύσκολη.
[izoī ine dhiskoli.]

Τό πρωινό εἶναι ἔτοιμο.
[toproino ine etimo.]

From page 43.

Αὐτό τό δωμάτιο εἶναι δικό του.
[afto tothomatio ine dhikotu.]

Αὐτά εἶναι δικά μας παιδιά.
[afta ine dhikamas pedhya.]

Εἶναι δικό σας αὐτό τό καπέλλο;
[ine dhikosas afto tokapelo?]

Τό μεσημέρι ἦταν πολύ ζεστό.
[tomesimeri itan poli zesto.]

Αὐτά τά τσιγάρα εἶναι δικά της.
[afta tatsighara ine dhikatis.]

Ἡ φωνή του εἶναι πολύ δυνατή.
[ifonitu ine poli dhinati.]

Ὁ Γιώργος εἶναι ἄνθρωπος δικός μας.
[oyorghos ine anthropos dhikozmas.]

Τά πόδια του εἶναι μεγάλα.
[tapodhyatu ine meghala.]

Αὐτή εἶναι δική μου ὑπόθεσις.
[afti ine dhikimu ipothesis.]

Δέν εἶναι δουλειά δική σου.
[dhenine dhulya dhikisu.]

Ὅλα αὐτά τά τσιγάρα εἶναι δικά σου;
[ola afta tatsighara ine dhikasu?]

Ἡ καρδιά του εἶναι πολύ ζεστή.
[ikardhyatu ine poli zesti.]

From page 162.

Καλημέρα σας. Τί γίνεστε;
[Kalimerasas. ti yineste?]

Πολύ καλά, εὐχαριστῶ, ἐσεῖς;
polikalā efkharisto, esis?

Τά ἴδια. Πῶς πάει ἡ δουλειά; Ἡσυχία.
taidhia. pos pai idhulya? isikhia.

Εἶναι κρῖμα νά δουλεύει κανεῖς
ine krīma nadhulevikanis

μ' ἓνα τόσο θαυμάσιο καιρό.
menatoso thavmasio kero.

Συμφωνῶ πληρέστατα. Τήν ἐρχόμενη
simfono plirestata. tinerkhomeni

ἐβδομάδα ὅμως ἔχουμε δύο μέρες ἄδεια.
evdhomadhaomos, ekhume dhyo meres adhia.

Τί γίνεται ὁ ἀδελφός σας; Καλά εἶναι.
ti yinete oadhelfossas? kalaine.

Τίς προάλλες μέ ρωτοῦσε γιά σένα.
tisproales merotuse yasena.

Νά τοῦ δώσεις πολλούς χαιρετισμούς. Ἀντίο.
natudhosis polus kheretizmus. adio.]

From page 166.

Μπορῶ νά μιλήσω στόν κύριον Ἀλέκο, παρακαλῶ;
[boro namiliso stongirion aleko, parakalo?]

Ἕνα λεπτό παρακαλῶ. Ἐμπρός.
enalepto parakalo. embros.

Ὁ κύριος Ἀλέκος; Ὁ ἴδιος.
okirios alekos? oidhios.

Ὁ κύριος Πάνος ἐδῶ. Εἶναι γιὰ τὴν ὑπόθεση
okirios panos edho. ine yatinipothesi

τοῦ διαμερίσματος πού σᾶς ἀνάφερα
tudhiamerizmatos pou sās anáfera

τίς προάλλες. Μήπως ἔχετε κανένα
tis proállες. mípos ekhete kanena

διαθέσιμο τώρα; Μιά στιγμή νά κοιτάξω,
dhiathesimo tora? myastighmi nakitakso,

κύριε Πάνο. Ἀλό. Εἶστε πολύ τυχερός,
kírie pano. alo. iste poli tikheros,

κύριε Πάνο. Ἔχω ἀκριβῶς ἓνα
kírie pano. ekho akrivos ena

πού σᾶς κάνει περίφημα. Πότε μπορεῖτε
pusaskani perífima. pote boríte

νά τό δεῖτε; Μπορῶ σήμερα ἢ αὔριο,
natodhíte? boro simera ianrio,

ἀλλά μετά τίς ἔξι. Ἐν τάξει. Θά σᾶς δόσω
ala metatiseksi. endaksi. thasazdhoso

τὴ διεύθυνση, καί μπορεῖτε νά πάτε
tidhieftinsí, keboríte napate

καί μόνος σας. Εὐχαριστῶ πολύ.
kemonossas. efkharisto poli.

Σᾶς εἶμαι πολύ ἐπόχρεος. Ἐγώ, εὐχαριστῶ.
sasíme poli ipokhreos. eggo, efkharisto.]

PARTS OF SPEECH

Every language has its characteristic ways of adapting words to perform their appropriate task in the stream of speech. Grammar studies and describes these ways; and when we learn the grammar of a foreign language, we shall inevitably find a contrast between its ways of using words and the ways of English.

The first thing to notice about Greek is that it possesses more *variable* words than English. Variable words are those whose form is changed according to their function in a sentence. This change is usually called *inflection*, and most often involves the use of different endings. English uses fewer inflections, and relies more on other means of discrimination, such as word-order and the use of structural features like *to* and *of*. For example, in the sentences *the doctor came* and *he saw the doctor*, the Greek word for *doctor* (γιατρός) has a different ending in each phrase. *The doctor came* is ὁ γιατρός ἦρθε, while *he saw the doctor* is εἶδε τό γιατρό. This significant variation of the endings allows more freedom of word-order in Greek. Thus, *the doctor came* might also be ἦρθε ὁ γιατρός.

In Greek, variable words include nouns, pronouns, adjectives and verbs. *Invariable* words include prepositions, conjunctions, particles, etc.

Changes in the form of nouns are used to denote gender, number (singular or plural) and case (as in English *I* or *me*, *who* or *whose*). In pronouns they denote gender, number, case and person (*I*, *you* or *he*). In adjectives they denote gender, number, case and degree (big, bigger, biggest). In verbs they denote number, person and time.

PART ONE
VARIABLE WORDS

NOUNS

Greek nouns are divided into three classes or genders, which may be termed M, F and N, as these classes are also called masculine, feminine and neuter.*

M nouns are those which can be preceded by the article *ὁ*, e.g. *ὁ ἄνθρωπος*, the man; *ὁ πατέρας*, the father; *ὁ Γιάννης*, John.

Their indefinite article is *ένας*, e.g. *ένας ἄνθρωπος*, a man; *ένας κήπος*, a garden.

F nouns are those which can be preceded by the article *ἡ*, e.g. *ἡ πόρτα*, the door; *ἡ ζωή*, life; *ἡ γυναίκα*, the woman.

Their indefinite article is *μία*, e.g. *μία γυναίκα*, a woman; *μία ιστορία*, a story.

N nouns are those which can be preceded by the article *τό*, e.g. *τό γραφεῖο*, the office; *τό παιδί*, the child; *τό μπάρ*, the bar.

Their indefinite article is *ένα*, e.g. *ένα παιδί*, a child; *ένα δωμάτιο*, a room.

Nouns are divided into the following main sub-classes according to their endings:

The nouns of class M end mostly in:

M₁ -ος, e.g. *ὁ ἄνθρωπος*, the man

Some end in:

M₂ -ας, e.g. *ὁ πατέρας*, the father

M₃ -ης, e.g. *ὁ ἐργάτης*, the workman

* There is some correlation of gender with sex.

The nouns of class F end in:

- F₁ -η, e.g. *ἡ ἀδελφή*, the sister
 F₂ -α, e.g. *ἡ γυναίκα*, the woman

The nouns of class N end mostly in:

- N₁ -ο, e.g. *τό γραφεῖο*, the office
 N₂ -ι, e.g. *τό παιδί*, the child

Some end in:

- N₃ -α, e.g. *τό ὄνομα*, the name
 N₄ in different other sounds, e.g. *τό μπάρο*, the bar;
τό γκαράζ, the garage; *τό φῶς*, the light; *τό τέλος*,
 the end.

Note that the article *ὁ, ἡ, τό* may be used even in front of proper names and abstract nouns, e.g. *ὁ Γιάννης*, John; *ἡ Ἀγγλία*, England; *ὁ Αὐγουστος*, August; *ἡ ζωή*, life; *ἡ χαρά*, joy.

ADJECTIVES

Adjectives can take three endings corresponding to the three classes of nouns. Thus "good" can be (M) *καλός*, (F) *καλή*, (N) *καλό* according to the noun with which it is used, e.g.

- M. *ὁ καλός ἄνθρωπος*, the good man
 F. *ἡ καλή γυναίκα*, the good woman
 N. *τό καλό παιδί*, the good child
 M. *ὁ μεγάλος κήπος*, the big garden
 F. *ἡ μεγάλη πόρτα*, the big door
 N. *τό μεγάλο δωμάτιο*, the big room

The three forms of the adjectives end mostly in

- M -ος, e.g. *καλός*
 F -η, e.g. *καλή*
 N -ο, e.g. *καλό*

Some have their F form ending in -α, e.g.

- ἡ θαυμάσια μητέρα*, the wonderful mother
ἡ καινούρια ζωή, the new life
ἡ ὡραία ἱστορία, the nice story
ἡ πλούσια γυναίκα, the rich woman

These are the adjectives which have a vowel (mainly *ι*) before the last vowel.

VOCABULARY

<i>ἡ γυναίκα</i> , woman	<i>τό κορίτσι</i> , girl
<i>ὁ ἄνθρωπος</i> , man	<i>ὡραῖος</i> , beautiful
<i>ἡ νύχτα</i> , night	<i>δροσερός</i> , cool
<i>ἡ ζωή</i> , life	<i>δύσκολος</i> , difficult
<i>τό πρωῒνό</i> , breakfast	<i>ἔτοιμος</i> , ready
<i>ὁ κήπος</i> , garden	<i>θαυμάσιος</i> , wonderful
<i>ἡ μητέρα</i> , mother	<i>καλός</i> , good
<i>τό ἄμαξι</i> , car	<i>καινούριος</i> , new
<i>τό μπάρο</i> , bar	<i>γεμάτος</i> , full
<i>πολύ</i> , very	<i>εἶναι</i> , is, are (he, she, it) is,
<i>ἡ Μαρία</i> , Mary	they are

EXAMPLES

- Ὁ κήπος εἶναι μεγάλος*, The garden is big.
Ἡ ζωή εἶναι δύσκολη,* Life is difficult.
Τό πρωῒνό εἶναι ἔτοιμο, Breakfast is ready.
Τό μπάρο εἶναι γεμάτο, The bar is full.
Τό ἄμαξι εἶναι καινούριο, The car is new.
Ἡ νύχτα εἶναι δροσερή, The night is cool.
Ἡ μητέρα εἶναι πολύ καλή, Mother is very good.

* This, and many similar sentences, could also be expressed in a different word-order, e.g. *Δύσκολη εἶναι ἡ ζωή*. In general, there is more flexibility in word-order in Greek than there is in English.

Ὁ ἄνθρωπος εἶναι καλός, The man is good.

Ἡ Μαρία εἶναι ἓνα θαυμάσιο κορίτσι, Mary is a wonderful girl.

Εἶναι μιά ωραία γυναίκα, She is a beautiful woman.

Εἶναι μιά πολύ καλή μητέρα, She is a very good mother.

Ὁ κήπος εἶναι πολύ μεγάλος, The garden is very big.

Τό καινούριο ἀμάξι εἶναι μεγάλο, The new car is big.

Ἡ ζωή εἶναι ωραία, Life is beautiful.

Ἡ δροσερή νύχτα εἶναι θαυμάσια, The cool night is wonderful.

EXERCISE 1

Translate:

1. Ἡ μητέρα εἶναι καλή.
2. Τό ἀμάξι εἶναι πολύ μεγάλο.
3. Ἡ νύχτα εἶναι θαυμάσια.
4. Τό μεγάλο μπάρ εἶναι γεμάτο.
5. Ὁ πατέρας εἶναι πολύ καλός.
6. Εἶναι ἓνα ωραῖο κορίτσι.
7. Εἶναι μιά πολύ καλή μητέρα.
8. Εἶναι ἓνας πολύ καλός ἄνθρωπος.
9. Ἡ ζωή εἶναι δύσκολη.
10. Τό πρῶτόν εἶναι ἑτοιμο.

'THIS' AND 'THAT'

The adjectivals* αὐτός, this, and ἐκεῖνος, that, change their endings according to the class of the nouns with which they are used.

When they are followed by a noun the definite article is always inserted between them. Thus:

M Αὐτός ὁ ἄνθρωπος, This man

Αὐτός ὁ κήπος, This garden

F Αὐτή ἡ γυναίκα, This woman

Αὐτή ἡ ζωή, This life

N Αὐτό τό παιδί, This child

Αὐτό τό ἀμάξι, This car

M Ἐκεῖνος ὁ ἐργάτης, That worker

F Ἐκεῖνη ἡ νύχτα, That night

N Ἐκεῖνο τό δωμάτιο, That room

Αὐτός ὁ ἄνθρωπος εἶναι πολύ καλός, This man is very good

Ἐκεῖνη ἡ γυναίκα εἶναι ωραία, That woman is beautiful

Αὐτό τό μπάρ εἶναι γεμάτο, This bar is full

EXERCISE 2

Fill in the blanks:

1. Αὐτό τό παιδί εἶναι καλ-
2. Ἡ νύχτα εἶναι δροσερ-
3. Ἐκεῖν- τό ἀμάξι εἶναι μεγάλο.
4. Εἶναι ἓνας πολύ καλ- πατέρας.
5. Αὐτ- ἡ γυναίκα εἶναι ωραία.

* The term adjectival is used for adjectives which are used in special ways.

6. Τό πρωϊνό — έτοιμο.
7. Έκεϊν— ό κήπος είναι μεγάλ—
8. Έ ζωή είναι δύσκολ—
9. Τό μπάρ είναι γεμᾶτ—
10. Αὐτή ή ιστορία είναι θαυμάσι—
11. Είναι ένα θαυμάσι— κορίτσι.
12. Αὐτός ό —
13. Αὐτή ή —
14. Αὐτό τό —

Negation is expressed by putting the negative particle *δέν* in front of the verb, e.g. *Τό πρωϊνό είναι έτοιμο*, Breakfast is ready. *Τό πρωϊνό δέν είναι έτοιμο*, Breakfast is not ready. *Τό μπάρ δέν είναι γεμᾶτο*, The bar is not full. *Αὐτή ή πόρτα δέν είναι μεγάλη*, This door is not big.

VOCABULARY

ήταν, was, were (he, she, it)	πλούσιος, rich
was, they were	ό φιλόσοφος, philosopher
νέος, new, young	λίγο, a little
ή κοπέλλα, girl	σοβαρός, serious
τό πάρτυ, party	λυπημένος, sad
εὐτυχισμένος, happy	δέν, not
υπέροχος, wonderful	άνόητος, silly
σωστός, correct	τό καμπαρέ, night-club

EXAMPLES

Είναι ένα θαυμάσιο παιδί, He is a wonderful boy.
Έ γυναίκα ήταν λυπημένη, The woman was sad.
Αὐτός ό άνθρωπος είναι πολύ σοβαρός, This man is very serious.
Τό πάρτυ ήταν υπέροχο, The party was wonderful.

Έ νέα κοπέλλα δέν είναι εὐτυχισμένη, The young girl is not happy.
Αὐτό δέν είναι σωστό, This is not right.
Είναι πολύ άνόητο, It is very silly.
Αὐτό τό παιδί είναι εὐτυχισμένο, This boy is happy.
Ό Γιώργος είναι πολύ πλούσιος, George is very rich.
Ό Γιάννης είναι λίγο λυπημένος, John is a little sad.

EXERCISE 3

Translate:

1. Έκείνη ή γυναίκα ήταν πολύ ώραία.
2. Αὐτό τό παιδί είναι πολύ εὐτυχισμένο.
3. Τό καμπαρέ δέν ήταν γεμᾶτο.
4. Ό Γιώργος είναι πολύ άνόητος.
5. Έ ζωή είναι ώραία.
6. Έ μητέρα είναι μιᾶ πολύ καλή γυναίκα.
7. Ό πατέρας είναι ένας θαυμάσιος άνθρωπος.
8. Έ Μαρία ήταν πολύ σοβαρή.
9. Αὐτός ό κήπος δέν είναι μεγάλος.
10. Αὐτό δέν είναι σωστό.
11. Ό Ράσελ είναι ένας μεγάλος φιλόσοφος.
12. Ό Πλάτων ήταν ένας μεγάλος φιλόσοφος.

THE PLURAL OF NOUNS

Nouns form their plural in these ways:

1. Nouns of the first class (M) by changing
 - (i) The article *ὁ* into *οἱ*
 - (ii) M₁. The ending *-ος* into *-οι*, e.g. *ὁ ἄνθρωπος*, the man; *οἱ ἄνθρωποι*, the men.
 - M_{2, 3}. The ending *-ας* or *-ης* into *-ες*, e.g. *ὁ ἄντρας*, the man; *οἱ ἄντρες*, the men; *ὁ ἐργάτης*, the worker; *οἱ ἐργάτες*,* the workers.
2. Nouns of the second class (F) by changing
 - (i) The article *ἡ* into *οἱ*
 - (ii) F₁ and F₂. The ending *-η* or *-α* into *-ες*, e.g. *ἡ ἀδελφή*, the sister; *οἱ ἀδελφές*, the sisters; *ἡ μέρα*, the day; *οἱ μέρες*, the days.

Some nouns of sub-class F₁ change the final *-η* into *-εις*, e.g. *ἡ λέξη*, the word; *οἱ λέξεις*, the words; *ἡ σκέψη*, the thought; *οἱ σκέψεις*, the thoughts. Such words may also be written with a final *-ις* in the singular, e.g. *ἡ λέξις*, *ἡ σκέσις*.

3. Nouns of the third class (N) by changing
 - (i) The article *τό* into *τά*
 - (ii) N₁. The ending *-ο* into *-α*, e.g. *τό τσιγάρο*, the cigarette; *τά τσιγάρα*, the cigarettes.
 - N₂. The ending *-ι* into *-ια*, e.g. *τό ἀμάξι*, the car; *τά ἀμάξια*, the cars.

* Most nouns ending in *-άς* or *-ής* (accented) form the plural by changing the final *ς* into *-δες*, e.g. *ὁ παπάς*, priest; *οἱ παπάδες*, priests.

THE PLURAL OF NOUNS

N₃. The ending *-α* into *-ατα*, e.g. *τό χρώμα*, the colour; *τά χρώματα*, the colours.

Note that *τό μπάρο*, plural = *τά μπάρα*, *τό καμπαρέ*, pl. = *τά καμπαρέ*, *τό φῶς*, light, pl. = *τά φῶτα*.

THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES

Adjectives associated with nouns in the plural also change their endings. In general, there is complete concord between the forms of nouns and adjectives. That is, every change in the endings of nouns is accompanied by a corresponding change in the endings of adjectives. Adjectives form their plural by undergoing the same final changes as the main noun forms. Thus, they change the ending:

- (M) -ος into -οι
 (F) -η or -α into -ες
 (N) -ο into -α

- E.g. (M) Ὁ καλὸς ἄνθρωπος, The good man.
 Οἱ καλοὶ ἄνθρωποι, The good men.
 Ὁ ἄνθρωπος εἶναι καλός, The man is good.
 Οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι καλοί, The men are good.
 (F) Ἡ καλή γυναῖκα, The good woman.
 Οἱ καλές γυναῖκες, The good women.
 Ἡ γυναῖκα εἶναι καλή, The woman is good.
 Οἱ γυναῖκες εἶναι καλές, The women are good.
 (N) Τὸ καλὸ παιδί, The good child.
 Τὰ καλὰ παιδιά, The good children.
 Τὸ παιδί εἶναι καλό, The child is good.
 Τὰ παιδιά εἶναι καλά, The children are good.

Note that some nouns are more common in the plural than in the singular form, e.g. τὰ μαλλιά, the hair; τὰ χεῖλη, the lips; τὰ λεφτά, the money; τὰ λόγια, words, talk; τὰ δάκρυα, tears.

VOCABULARY

καί, and	ἡ συνέπεια, consequence
δύο or δύο, two	ἡ μέρα, day
ἄλλος, other	τὸ δωμάτιο, room
ἀπαραίτητος, necessary, indispensable	κακός, bad
νεαρός, young man	ξανθός, blond, fair
τὸ ψέμα, the lie	τὸ χρώμα, colour
ἡ Ἀθήνα, Athens	ἐδῶ, here
πράσινος, green	μακρὰ, far
μαῦρος, black	νερό, water
	κρύος, cold

EXERCISE 4

Translate:

- Οἱ νύχτες εἶναι δροσερές.
- Οἱ μέρες δὲν εἶναι πολὺ δροσερές.
- Οἱ συνέπειες ἦταν σοβαρές.
- Τὰ λεφτά εἶναι ἀπαραίτητα.
- Αὐτοὶ οἱ νεαροὶ εἶναι εὐτυχισμένοι.
- Δύο πράσινα μάτια.
- Κακά εἶναι τὰ ψέματα.
- Τὰ μαῦρα μάτια εἶναι ὠραῖα.
- Ἡ Ἀθήνα εἶναι μαγευτική.
- Ἐνὰ παιδί ἦταν ἐδῶ. Τὰ ἄλλα παιδιά ἦταν πολὺ μακρὰ.
- Αὐτὰ τὰ δύο δωμάτια εἶναι μεγάλα καὶ δροσερά.
- Οἱ ἄνθρωποι, οἱ γυναῖκες καὶ τὰ παιδιά εἶναι εὐτυχισμένοι.
- Τὰ πολλὰ λεφτά δὲν εἶναι ἀπαραίτητα.
- Τὰ ξανθὰ μαλλιά εἶναι ὠραῖα.
- Ἡ ἄλλη γυναῖκα δὲν ἦταν πολὺ καλή.
- Αὐτὸ τὸ χρώμα εἶναι πράσινο.
- Αὐτὸ τὸ νερό εἶναι κρύο.

EXERCISE 5

Fill in the blanks:

- | | |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Τά μεγάλ- δωμάτια. | 6. οἱ ὥραϊ- γυναῖκες. |
| 2. οἱ ἄλλ- ἄντρες. | 7. τὰ μαῦρ- μαλλιά. |
| 3. ὁ σοβαρ- ἄνθρωπος. | 8. ἡ μαγευτικ- 'Αθήνα. |
| 4. ἓνα πράσιν- ἀμάξι. | 9. μιὰ δύσκολ- ζωή. |
| 5. μιὰ θαυμάσι- ἱστορία. | 10. τὰ ὥραϊ- χεῖλη. |

THE PRONOUNS 'MY', 'YOUR', ETC.

The personal pronouns expressing possession are changed for person and number as follows:

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
1. μου, my	μας, our
2. σου, your	σας, your
3. του, his	τους, their
της, her	
του, its	

These pronouns are put after the nouns with which they are associated. The nouns are preceded by the article, e.g.

- τό σπίτι, the house
 τό σπίτι μου, my house
 τό ὄνομα, the name
 τό ὄνομά μου, my name
 ὁ φίλος, the friend
 ὁ φίλος μας, our friend
 ἡ οἰκογένεια, the family
 ἡ οἰκογένειά τους, their family

τό χέρι μου, my hand; ὁ πατέρας σου, your father;
 ἡ μητέρα της, her mother; ὁ κήπος μας, our garden; οἱ
 κήποι μας, our gardens; τὰ λεφτά σας, your money.

When the nouns are preceded by an adjective the possessive pronoun is usually put between the adjective and the noun, e.g.

- τό ἀμάξι, the car
 τό καινούριο ἀμάξι, the new car

τό καινούριο μου άμάξι, my new car
τά μαύρα μαλλιά, the black hair
τά μαύρα της μαλλιά, her black hair

Ἡ καλή μου μητέρα, my good mother; τό μεγάλο της παιδί,
her big child; ὁ καλός μας φίλος, our good friend;
ὁ καλός σας φίλος, your good friend; οἱ καλοί σας φίλοι,
your good friends; τά μεγάλα τους σπίτια, their big houses.

Sometimes the pronoun is put after the noun, e.g. οἱ
καλοί φίλοι μας, our good friends; τά μαύρα μαλλιά σου,
your black hair; τά ὠραῖα μάτια της, her beautiful eyes.

VOCABULARY

ἡ ἀδελφή, sister	ὁ ἀδελφός, brother
τό πρόσωπο, face	ὁ θεῖος, uncle
ἡ θεία, aunt	τό κεφάλι, head
τό ποτήρι, glass	μικρός, small
πτωχός, poor	λεπτός, thin
ἀλλά, but	μπλέ, blue
ἡ οἰκογένεια, family	δυνατός, strong

EXAMPLES

Τό ὄνομά μου εἶναι Ἀντρέας, My name is Andrew.
Ὁ ἀδελφός μου καί ὁ πατέρας σου εἶναι φίλοι, My brother
and your father are friends.
Τό πρόσωπό του ἦταν πολύ σοβαρό, His face was very
serious.
Τά μάτια της εἶναι μαύρα, Her eyes are black.
Ἡ οἰκογένειά του εἶναι πλούσια, His family is rich.
Ὁ πατέρας σου εἶναι καλός ἄνθρωπος, Your (sing.) father
is a good man.
Τό ποτήρι του ἦταν γεμάτο, His glass was full.

EXERCISE 6

Translate:

1. Ἡ ἀδελφή σου εἶναι λυπημένη.
2. Ὁ θεῖος μας εἶναι πολύ καλός ἀλλά εἶναι πτωχός.
3. Τά χέρια τους εἶναι μαύρα.
4. Ἡ θεία μου ἦταν πολύ εὐτυχισμένη.
5. Τό κεφάλι του εἶναι λίγο μικρό.
6. Τά μαλλιά της εἶναι ξανθά καί τά μάτια της μπλέ.
7. Τό καινούριο του άμάξι εἶναι μαύρο.
8. Τό σπίτι μου εἶναι μικρό ἀλλά δροσερό.
9. Ὁ ἀδελφός μου εἶναι λεπτός ἀλλά πολύ δυνατός.
10. Ὁ Γιώργος εἶναι φίλος μου ἀλλά ὁ Γιάννης δέν εἶναι.
11. Ἡ οἰκογένεια του εἶναι πτωχή.
12. Τά χέρια της εἶναι λεπτά.

THE PRONOUNS 'MINE', 'YOURS', ETC.

The personal pronouns corresponding to the English mine, yours, or my own, your own, etc. are formed by the adjective *δικός*, *δική*, *δικό*, followed by the pronoun *μου*, *σου*, etc.

The adjective changes according to the form of its noun. The adjective for nouns of class M is *δικός*, for class F *δική* and for class N *δικό*.

In the following paradigm *δικός* is used as the basic form.

Singular	Plural
<i>δικός μου</i> , mine	<i>δικός μας</i> , ours
<i>δικός σου</i> , yours	<i>δικός σας</i> , yours
<i>δικός του</i> , his	<i>δικός τους</i> , theirs
<i>δικός της</i> , hers	

EXAMPLES

Αυτό τό σπίτι είναι δικό του, This house is his.
Αυτό τό όνομα δέν είναι δικό σου, This name is not yours.
Είναι δικά μου τά λεφτά, The money is mine.
Τό δικό μας άμάξι είναι μικρό, Our own car is small.
Ό Άντρέας είναι δικός μου φίλος, Andrew is my own friend.
Αυτά τά τσιγάρα είναι δικά της, These cigarettes are hers.

Note the implications of the above pronouns by themselves: *δικός μου* implies "mine, one object of class M"; *δικοί μου*, "mine, several objects of class M"; *δικά του*, "his, several objects of class N", etc.

PRONOUNS: 'MINE', 'YOURS', ETC. 43

Questions are denoted simply by intonation without any change in word-order, e.g.

Η Μαρία είναι άδελφή σας; Is Mary your sister?
Αυτό τό ποτήρι είναι δικό σας; Is this glass yours?
Ναί, Yes.
Όχι, No.

VOCABULARY

<i>ή δουλειά</i> , work	<i>τό μεσημέρι</i> , noon, mid-day
<i>τό πόδι</i> , foot, leg	<i>ή φωνή</i> , voice
<i>δλος</i> , all	<i>ή υπόθεση</i> , the matter
<i>ζεστός</i> , warm, hot	<i>ή καρδιά</i> , heart
<i>τό καπέλλο</i> , hat	

EXERCISE 7

Translate:

1. *Αυτό τό δωμάτιο είναι δικό του*.
2. *Αυτά είναι δικά μας παιδιά*.
3. *Είναι δικό σας αυτό τό καπέλλο;*
4. *Τό μεσημέρι ήταν πολύ ζεστό*.
5. *Αυτά τά τσιγάρα είναι δικά της*.
6. *Η φωνή του είναι πολύ δυνατή*.
7. *Ό Γιώργος είναι άνθρωπος δικός μας*.
8. *Τά πόδια του είναι μεγάλα*.
9. *Αυτή είναι δική μου υπόθεση*.
10. *Δέν είναι δουλειά δική σου*.
11. *Όλα αυτά τά τσιγάρα είναι δικά σου;*
12. *Η καρδιά του είναι πολύ ζεστή*.

GENITIVE OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES

Both nouns and adjectives change their form to denote singular or plural number and also to denote case according to their place and function in the sentence. Besides the nominative case that we have been considering as basic, they have two other forms in each number; the genitive and the accusative.

The genitive singular of nouns is formed by changing:

1. (M) The article *ὁ* into *τοῦ* (the indefinite article *ἕνας* into *ἑνός*).
- (F) The article *ἡ* into *τῆς* (the indefinite *μιά* into *μιάς*).
- (N) The article *τό* into *τοῦ* (the indefinite *ένα* into *ένός*).
2. M₁. The ending *-ος* into *-ου*, e.g. *ὁ θεῖος*, gen. *τοῦ θείου*; *ὁ κῆπος*, gen. *τοῦ κήπου*.
- M₂. The ending *-ας* into *-α*, e.g. *ὁ ἄντρας*, gen. *τοῦ ἄντρα*.
- M₃. The ending *-ης* into *-η*, e.g. *ὁ Γιάννης*, gen. *τοῦ Γιάννη*.
- F₁. The ending *-η* into *-ης*, e.g. *ἡ ἀδελφή*, gen. *τῆς ἀδελφῆς*.
- F₂. The ending *-α* into *-ας*, e.g. *ἡ μητέρα*, gen. *τῆς μητέρας*.
- N₁. The ending *-ο* into *-ου*, e.g. *τό τσιγάρο*, gen. *τοῦ τσιγάρου*.
- N₂. The ending *-ι* into *-ιοῦ*, e.g. *τό παιδί*, gen. *τοῦ παιδιοῦ*.
- N₃. The ending *-α* into *-ατος*, e.g. *τό ὄνομα*, gen. *τοῦ ὀνόματος*.

The genitive singular of adjectives is formed by changing the endings in the same way.

Thus :

M. *ὁ μέγας*, gen. *τοῦ μεγάλου*

F. *ἡ μεγάλη*, gen. *τῆς μεγάλης*

N. *τό μεγάλο*, gen. *τοῦ μεγάλου*

The accent may be removed to the following syllable in some nouns of sub-class M₁ and N₁, e.g. *ὁ ἄνθρωπος*, gen. *τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*; *τό δωμάτιο*, gen. *τοῦ δωματίου*; and in all nouns of sub-class N₂, e.g. *τό πόδι*, gen. *τοῦ ποδιοῦ*.

Adjectives have always the case of the nouns they qualify.

EXAMPLES

M. <i>ὁ πλούσιος</i>	gen. <i>τοῦ πλούσιου</i>
<i>θεῖος</i>	<i>θείου</i>
<i>ὁ νεαρός φίλος</i>	„ <i>τοῦ νεαροῦ φίλου</i>
<i>ὁ ἄλλος ἄντρας</i>	„ <i>τοῦ ἄλλου ἄντρα</i>
F. <i>ἡ μικρή ἀδελφή</i>	„ <i>τῆς μικρῆς ἀδελφῆς</i>
<i>ἡ καλή μητέρα</i>	„ <i>τῆς καλῆς μητέρας</i>
N. <i>τό μεγάλο δωμάτιο</i>	„ <i>τοῦ μεγάλου δωματίου</i>
<i>τό μαῦρο ἄμαξι</i>	„ <i>τοῦ μαύρου ἄμαξιού</i>
<i>τό ξανθό χρώμα</i>	„ <i>τοῦ ξανθοῦ χρώματος</i>

The use of the genitive

The genitive is generally used to express possession or appurtenance, e.g.

Τό ὄνομα τοῦ πατέρα μου εἶναι Βασίλης, The name of my father is Basil.

Ὁ ἀδελφός μου εἶναι φίλος τοῦ Γιώργου, My brother is a friend of George's.

Ἡ πόρτα τοῦ σπιτιοῦ μου εἶναι μαύρη, The door of my house is black.

Τό πάρτυ τοῦ Κώστα ἦταν ὑπέροχο, Costas' party was wonderful.

Τό χρώμα τοῦ ἀμαξιοῦ του εἶναι μπλέ, The colour of his car is blue.

Τό ὄνομα τῆς μητέρας τοῦ φίλου μου εἶναι Μαρία, The name of my friend's mother is Mary.

Ἡ ζωή τῆς Ἀθήνας εἶναι δύσκολη, Life in Athens is difficult.

Ἡ ἀγάπη μιᾶς μητέρας εἶναι πολύ μεγάλη, A mother's love is very great.

Τό σπίτι ενός φτωχοῦ ἀνθρώπου εἶναι μικρό, The house of a poor man is small.

Τά μάτια μιᾶς ξανθῆς γυναίκας εἶναι μπλέ, A blond woman's eyes are blue.

VOCABULARY

ἡ μηχανή, engine	εὐχάριστος, pleasant
ὁ ἥλιος, sun	κατάμαυρος, very black
ὁ κύριος, Mr., gentleman	ἡ μάνα, mother
ἡ κυρία, Mrs., lady	ἡ ἀνοιξη, spring
ὁ Ἀγγλος, Englishman	τό Αἰγαῖο, Aegean
ἡ Ἀγγλίδα, Englishwoman	τό αὐτοκίνητο, car

EXERCISE 8

Translate:

1. Τό σπίτι τῆς ἀδελφῆς μου εἶναι πολύ μεγάλο.
2. Ὁ κῆπος τοῦ σπιτιοῦ μας εἶναι μικρός ἀλλά ὠραῖος.
3. Τό ὄνομα αὐτοῦ τοῦ Ἀγγλου εἶναι Τζών.
4. Τό ὄνομα αὐτῆς τῆς Ἀγγλίδας εἶναι Μάρκετ.
5. Τό πάρτυ τῆς κυρίας Μπενάκη ἦταν θαυμάσιο.
6. Ὁ ἥλιος τοῦ μεσημεριοῦ εἶναι πολύ ζεστός.
7. Τά μαλλιά τοῦ Ἀντρέα εἶναι μαύρα.

8. Ἡ οἰκογένεια τοῦ κυρίου Ἀντώνη εἶναι πολύ πλούσια.

9. Τό φῶς τοῦ μικροῦ σου δωματίου δέν εἶναι πολύ δυνατό.

10. Ἡ ἀνοιξη τῆς Ἀθήνας εἶναι μαγευτική.

11. Ὁ ἥλιος τοῦ Αἰγαίου εἶναι ζεστός καί εὐχάριστος.

12. Τά μάτια αὐτῆς τῆς γυναίκας εἶναι κατάμαυρα.

13. Τό γραφεῖο τοῦ φίλου μου εἶναι λίγο μικρό, ἀλλά ὁροσερό καί εὐχάριστο.

14. Ἡ μηχανή τοῦ αὐτοκινήτου σου εἶναι πολύ δυνατή.

15. Τά μαλλιά τῆς νέας ἐκείνης Ἑγγλέζας εἶναι ξανθά.

GENITIVE PLURAL

The genitive plural is a rather rare case. It is formed by changing:

1. all articles into τῶν.
2. the final syllable of the nominative plural into -ων.

The accent may be removed to the following syllable in some nouns of sub-classes M₁, F₁ and N₁; in most M₃ and N₃; and in all M₂ and N₂ nouns, e.g.

Nominative Plural	Genitive Plural
M ₁ . οἱ ἄνθρωποι	τῶν ἀνθρώπων
M ₃ . οἱ ἐργάτες	τῶν ἐργατῶν
F ₂ . οἱ γυναῖκες	τῶν γυναικῶν
F ₁ . οἱ ἀδελφές	τῶν ἀδελφῶν
N ₁ . τὰ γραφεῖα	τῶν γραφείων
N ₂ . τὰ πόδια	τῶν ποδιῶν
N ₃ . τὰ ὀνόματα	τῶν ὀνομάτων

The nouns of sub-class F₁, whose nominative plural ends in -εις, change this ending into -εων, e.g. οἱ λέξεις, gen. τῶν λέξεων; οἱ σκέψεις, gen. τῶν σκέψεων. Such words may also form their genitive singular in -εως, e.g. nominative ἡ σκέψη or ἡ σκέψις, gen. τῆς σκέψεως or τῆς σκέψεως.

Like the nouns, adjectives form their genitive plural by changing the endings of the nominative plural into -ων, e.g.

Nominative Plural	Genitive Plural
M. καλοί	καλῶν
F. καλές	καλῶν
N. καλά	καλῶν

GENITIVE PLURAL

VOCABULARY

ἕνας, one (used with nouns of class M), gen. ἐνός	
μιά, one (used with nouns of class F), gen. μιᾶς	
ένα,* one (used with nouns of class N), gen. ἐνός	
δύο, two	
τρεις, three (with nouns of class M and F), gen. τριῶν	
τρία, three (with nouns of class N), gen. τριῶν	
τέσσερεις, four (with nouns of class M and F), gen. τεσσάρων	
τέσσερα, four (with nouns of class N), gen. τεσσάρων	
πέντε, five	ὁ χρόνος, year
ἕξι, six	συγκινητικός, moving
ἑπτὰ, seven	τό δέντρο, tree
ὀκτώ, eight	σκληρός, hard
ἐννιά, nine	μόνο, only
δέκα, ten	πράσινος, green

EXAMPLES

*Ο μικρός Γιώργος είναι πέντε χρονῶν, Little George is five years old.

*Ἡ Μαρία είναι ἑπτὰ χρονῶν, Mary is seven.

Τό χρώμα τῶν δέντρων είναι πράσινο, The colour of the trees is green.

Τό χρώμα τῶν ματιῶν τοῦ Νίκου είναι μπλέ, The colour of Nikos' eyes is blue.

*Ἡ ζωή τῶν πλούσιων ἀνθρώπων είναι εὐχάριστη, The life of rich men is pleasant.

* The numerals ἕνας, τρεις, τέσσερεις can be considered as adjectivals in that they vary to express gender, e.g. ἕνας ἀδελφός, a brother; μιὰ ἀδελφή, a sister; ένα παιδί, a boy, etc.

EXERCISE 9

Translate:

1. Τά δωμάτια τῶν μεγάλων σπιτιῶν εἶναι δροσερά.
2. Ἡ ζωὴ τῶν ἐργατῶν εἶναι σκληρή.
3. Ὁ ἀδελφός μου εἶναι μόνο ὀκτῶ χρονῶν.
4. Οἱ μηχανές τῶν καλῶν αὐτοκινήτων εἶναι δυνατές.
5. Ἡ μικρὴ μου ἀδελφή εἶναι τεσσάρων χρονῶν.
6. Τά χέρια τῶν ὥραιων γυναικῶν εἶναι λεπτά.
7. Ἡ ἱστορία τῶν τριῶν παιδιῶν καὶ τῆς φτωχῆς μάνας τους ἦταν πολὺ συγκινητική.

THE ACCUSATIVE

A very frequent case is the accusative singular which is formed by changing:

1. M. The article *ὁ* into *τό* (the indefinite article *ένα* into *ένα*).
- F. The article *ἡ* into *τή*.
- N. The article *τό* into *τό*.
2. M₁. The ending *-ος* into *-ο*.
- M₂. The ending *-ας* into *-α*.
- M₃. The ending *-ης* into *-η*.

All other endings remain unchanged except the class F ending *-ος* which changes into *-ο*. (See p. 55.)

A final *ν* is added to both articles of class M and F, as well as to most nouns and adjectives of class M and F, when the following word begins with a vowel or *κ, π, τ, ξ, ψ*.

EXAMPLES

	<i>Nominative</i>	<i>Accusative</i>
M ₁ .	ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁ καλὸς ἄνθρωπος	τόν ἄνθρωπο τόν καλόν ἄνθρωπο
M ₂ .	ὁ πατέρας	τόν πατέρα
M ₃ .	ὁ Γιάννης	τό Γιάννη
F ₁ .	ἡ ζωὴ ἡ ὥραία ζωὴ	τή ζωή τήν ὥραία ζωή
F ₂ .	ἡ πόρτα	τήν πόρτα

The accusative is used:

1. After prepositions such as *σέ, to, on to, into, at, etc.*;

μέ, with; πάνω σέ, on; κοντά σέ, near; μέσα σέ, into, inside; από, from; πάνω από, over; κάτω από, under; γιά, for, etc. The preposition σέ becomes σ in front of the articles which begin with τ or a vowel. In the case of τ the σ is written jointly with the article, e.g. στον πατέρα, στη μητέρα, στο γραφείο, κοντά στον κήπο. Otherwise it is written as σ', e.g. σ' ένα σινεμά.

2. After verbs such as βλέπω, I see; τρώγω, I eat; θέλω, I want; έχω, I have, etc.; e.g. Βλέπω έναν άνθρωπο, I see a man; Έχω τρεις αδελφούς, I have three brothers; Θέλω δέκα τσιγάρα, I want ten cigarettes.
3. After some nouns when it expresses their content, e.g. ένα ποτήρι νερό, a glass of water.

VOCABULARY

ή Ἰταλία, Italy
 ή Ἑλλάδα, Greece
 κάμποσος (adj.), a lot
 τά λεφτά, money
 τό σαλόνι, living room
 γκριζος, grey
 ή Κύπρος, Cyprus
 τό μπουκάλι, bottle
 τό αεροπλάνο, airplane
 ή Ἀμερική, America
 ήρθε, he came
 έχω, I have
 πολλοί (adj. pl.), a lot

ή Ἀγγλία, England
 ή ὥρα, hour, time
 τό κρασί, wine
 ή θάλασσα, sea
 τό νερό, water
 ή βεράντα, veranda
 ὅλος, whole
 ψηλός, high, tall
 δόσε μου, give me
 εἶδε, he saw
 θέλω, I want
 ὅλοι, all

EXAMPLES

Ὁ πατέρας του είναι στην Ἰταλία, His father is in Italy.
 Ἦρθε στην Ἑλλάδα μέ κάμποσα λεφτά, He came to Greece with a lot of money.

Αὐτήν τήν ὥρα εἶναι στό αεροπλάνο, At this time he is in the airplane.

Ὁ θεῖος μου εἶναι ἐκεῖνος μέ τά μαῦρα μαλλιά, My uncle is that one with the black hair.

Έχω πολλά λεφτά, I have a lot of money.

Τό κορίτσι μέ τά γκριζα μάτια, The girl with the grey eyes.

Εἶναι ὅλοι στή βεράντα, They are all on the veranda.

Έχω μίαν ἀδελφή καί έναν ἀδελφό, I have a sister and a brother.

Ὁ Χρῖστος εἶναι στό σαλόνι, Christos is in the living room.

Πῆγε στό γραφεῖο μ' ένα μπουκάλι κρασί, He went to the office with a bottle of wine.

Αὐτά τά τσιγάρα εἶναι γιά τό Γιώργο, These cigarettes are for George.

EXERCISE 10

Translate:

1. Θέλω λίγο νερό.
2. Εἶναι στήν Κύπρο.
3. Τό αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι στό γκαράζ.
4. Ὁλη ή οικογένεια εἶναι στό σπίτι.
5. Δέν έχω λεφτά.
6. Έχω μιά χαρά μέσα στήν καρδιά μου.
7. Ὁ ἄνθρωπος μέ τό ψηλό καπέλλο εἶναι στή βεράντα.
8. Ἐκεῖνη ή γυναίκα μέ τά γκριζα μαλλιά εἶναι ή μητέρα μου.
9. Ὁ ἀδελφός μου πῆγε στήν Ἀγγλία καί ή ἀδελφή μου στήν Ἑλλάδα.
10. Τό δωμάτιό μου εἶναι πάνω ἀπό τό δικό σου.
11. Ἦταν στό γραφεῖο του γιά κάμποση ὥρα.
12. Τό σπίτι μας εἶναι κοντά στή θάλασσα.
13. Τά πόδια του εἶναι μέσα στό νερό.

14. Θέλω ένα ποτήρι κρασί.
15. Ὁ θεῖος μου ἦρθε ἀπὸ τὴν Ἀμερική.
16. Εἶδα τὸ φίλο σου τὸ Γιάννη στὴν Ἀθήνα.
17. Αὐτὸ τὸ καπέλλο εἶναι γιὰ τὸν Κώστα.
18. Δόσε μου ένα ποτήρι νερό.
19. Δόσε μου τρία μπουκάλια κρασί.
20. Ὁ πατέρας μου πῆγε στὴν Ἀθήνα γιὰ δουλειά.

ACCUSATIVE PLURAL

The accusative plural is formed by changing:

1. M. The plural article οἱ into τοὺς.
F. " " " οἱ into τίς.
N. " " " τὰ into τά.
2. M. The nominative plural ending -οι into -ους, e.g.
οἱ φίλοι, acc. τοὺς φίλους.

All other endings remain the same as in the nominative plural.

EXAMPLES

Ἔχω δύο ἀδελφές καὶ τρεῖς ἀδελφούς, I have two sisters and three brothers.

Δόσε μου δέκα τσιγάρα, παρακαλῶ, Give me ten cigarettes, please.

Στὸ πάρτυ τοῦ Γιάννη εἶδα πολλοὺς ἄντρες ἀλλὰ λίγες γυναῖκες, At John's party I saw many men but few women.

VOCABULARY

τὸ σπέρτο, match	παρακαλῶ, please
τὸ τραπέζι, table	τώρα, now
τὸ τηλέφωνο, telephone	ποῦ; where?
ἡ κουζίνα, kitchen	τὸ Λονδίνο, London
ἡ Γαλλία, France	ἡ Θεσσαλονίκη, Salonica
τὸ παλτό, overcoat	ὁ δρόμος, street
εἶδα, I saw	ἡ εἴσοδος,* entrance
ἔχει, has (he, she, it)	τὸ σινεμά, cinema
τὸ κουτί, box	

* Some F nouns end in -ος, e.g. ἡ νῆσος, island, which is declined as follows: Sing.: nom. ἡ νῆσος, gen. τῆς νήσου, acc. τὴ νήσο. Plur.: nom. αἱ νῆσοι, gen. τῶν νήσων, acc. τὰς νήσους.

EXERCISE 11

Translate :

1. *Είδα τόν ἀδελφό σου στό δρόμο.*
2. *Τό νερό εἶναι πάνω στό τραπέζι.*
3. *Ἡ ἀδελφή μου εἶναι στή Γαλλία.*
4. *Τό αὐτοκίνητο τοῦ πατέρα μου εἶναι κοντά στήν εἴσοδο τοῦ σινεμά.*
5. *Ὁ θεῖος μου ἔχει πολλά λεφτά.*
6. *Ὁ μικρός μου ἀδελφός εἶναι μόνο πέντε χρονῶν.*
7. *Ἐκεῖνος ὁ ἄνθρωπος μέ τά γκρίζα μαλλιά εἶναι ὁ πατέρας μου.*
8. *Ποῦ εἶναι ὁ Ἀντρέας; Εἶναι στό σινεμά.*
9. *Ποῦ εἶναι ὁ ἀδελφός σου; Πῆγε στή θάλασσα μέ τούς φίλους του.*
10. *Τό φῶς αὐτοῦ τοῦ δωματίου δέν εἶναι δυνατό.*
11. *Ποῦ εἶναι τώρα ὁ Κώστας; Εἶναι στό γραφεῖο του.*
12. *Ποῦ εἶναι τό παλτό μου; Εἶναι στό σαλόνι.*
13. *Δόσε μου λίγο κρασί, παρακαλῶ.*
14. *Τώρα δέν ἔχω λεφτά.*

EXERCISE 12

1. My father is in London.
2. The children are by the sea.
3. The wine is in the bottle.
4. The bottle is on the table.
5. I have one brother and one sister.
6. George went to Salonica.
7. Your friend is on the veranda.
8. The telephone is in the living room.
9. Where is my breakfast?
10. The breakfast is in the kitchen.
11. Where are the children?

12. The children are in the garden.
13. That tall man is my uncle.
14. He went to England by plane.
15. He went with my brother.
16. My mother is not at home now.
17. All the family went to the sea.
18. I have not much money.
19. I want some water.
20. My brother is at his work, now.
21. The telephone is not by the door.
22. The boy is under the table.
23. This wine is for your father.
24. Give me some water, please.
25. Give me ten cigarettes and a box of matches.

TELLING THE TIME

VOCABULARY

τί, what
τό τέταρτο, quarter
μισός, half
δώδεκα, twelve
δεκατρεῖς, δεκατρία, thirteen
δεκατέσσερες, -α, fourteen
δεκαπέντε, fifteen
τριάντα, thirty
πενήντα, fifty
ἐβδομήντα, seventy
ἐνενήντα, ninety

τό λεπτό, minute
παρά, minus
ἐντεκα, eleven
εἴκοσι, twenty
εἰκοσι δύο, twenty-two
εἰκοσιπέντε, twenty-five
σαράντα, forty
ἐξήντα, sixty
ὀγδόντα, eighty
ἐκατό, hundred

The thing to note about telling the time is that the hour is put first followed by *καί*, plus, or *παρά*, minus, and the appropriate fraction or number of minutes, e.g.

Τί ὥρα εἶναι; What time is it?

Εἶναι τρεῖς, It is three.

or *Εἶναι ἡ ὥρα τρεῖς,* It is three o'clock.

Εἶναι ἡ ὥρα μία, It is one o'clock.

Note that the numerals *μία, τρεῖς*, etc., and the adjective *μισή* are in concord with *ὥρα* which is a class F noun. The N forms *τρία*, etc., are used when they refer to N class nouns such as *λεπτά*, e.g.

Εἶναι ἡ ὥρα τρεῖς καί τρία λεπτά, It is three minutes past three.

Τί ὥρα εἶναι παρακαλῶ; What is the time, please?

TELLING THE TIME

Τώρα εἶναι τρεῖς καί τέταρτο, Now it is a quarter past three.

**Ὅχι, δέν εἶναι τρεῖς καί τέταρτο, εἶναι τρεῖς παρά τέταρτο,* No, it is not quarter past three, it is quarter to three.

Τώρα εἶναι πέντε καί μισή, Now it is half past five.

Τώρα εἶναι ἑπτὰ μιση, Now it is half past seven.

The *καί* in front of the *μισή* is sometimes omitted, in which case the accent is always removed to the last syllable of the numerals, e.g.

Εἶναι πεντέ μιση, It is half past five.

In the case of *τρεῖς* and *τέσσερες* an *ή* sound is added in front of the *μηση* and the accent falls on this *η*, e.g.

Εἶναι τρεῖς ἡμηση, It is half past three.

Εἶναι δώδεκα παρά πέντε λεπτά, It is five to twelve.

Εἶναι ἔντεκα καί πέντε, It is five past eleven.

**Ὁ Γιάννης ἦρθε στίς πέντε,* John came at five.

Μιά ὥρα ἔχει ἐξήντα λεπτά, An hour has sixty minutes.

**Ἐκατό λεπτά εἶναι μία ὥρα καί σαράντα λεπτά,* A hundred minutes is one hour and forty minutes.

EXERCISE 13

Write in full:

1. 3.15'. 2. 12.0'. 3. 8.50'. 4. 6.45'. 5. 4.5'. 6. 9.10'.
7. 7.30. 8. 10.30. 9. 1.0. 10. 3.45. 11. 1.4'. 12. 80 λεπτά εἶναι μία ὥρα καί 20 λεπτά.
13. 90 λεπτά εἶναι μία ὥρα καί 30 λεπτά.
14. 65 λεπτά εἶναι μία ὥρα καί 5 λεπτά.

VOCABULARY

ἡ Κυριακή, Sunday	ἡ μέρα, day
ἡ Δευτέρα, Monday	ἡ εβδομάδα, week
ἡ Τρίτη, Tuesday	πρώτος, first
ἡ Τετάρτη, Wednesday	δεύτερος, second
ἡ Πέμπτη, Thursday	τρίτος, third
ἡ Παρασκευή, Friday	τέταρτος, fourth
τὸ Σάββατο, Saturday	πέμπτος, fifth
τελευταῖος, last	ἕκτος, sixth
ἡ τάξη, class	ἑβδομος, seventh
ὁ μαθητής, student, pupil	ὀγδοος, eighth
δέκατος, tenth	ἐνατος, ninth
εἰκοστός, twentieth	ἐκατοστός, hundredth
ἴσος, equal	δέκατος τρίτος, thirteenth

EXAMPLES

- Ἡ Κυριακή εἶναι ἡ πρώτη μέρα τῆς εβδομάδας, Sunday is the first day of the week.
 Ὁ Βάσος εἶναι ὁ ἕκτος μαθητής στήν τάξη του, Vassos is the sixth pupil in his class.
 Ἐνα δέκατο εἶναι ἴσο μέ δέκα ἐκατοστά, One tenth is equal to ten hundredths.

EXERCISE 14

Translate:

1. Τό Σάββατο εἶναι ἡ τελευταία μέρα τῆς εβδομάδας.
2. Ὁ Κώστας πῆγε στή θάλασσα τήν Τετάρτη.
3. Ἡ Κυριακή εἶναι μιὰ εὐχάριστη μέρα.
4. Μιά εβδομάδα ἔχει ἑφτά μέρες.
5. Ὁ Πένος εἶναι ὁ δεύτερος μαθητής στήν τάξη του.
6. Πέντε ἐκατοστά εἶναι ἴσα μέ ἓνα εἰκοστό.
7. Ἐνα δέκατο τρίτο εἶναι ἴσο μέ δύο εἰκοστά ἕκτα.
8. Μισή ὥρα εἶναι ἴση μέ τριάντα λεπτά.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

Adjectives form their comparative mostly by taking the word *πιο* (= more) in front of them. They are then followed by the preposition *ἀπό* and the accusative, e.g.

Ὁ Μιχάλης εἶναι πλούσιος, Michael is rich.

Ὁ Μιχάλης εἶναι *πιο* πλούσιος *ἀπό* τόν Κώστα, Michael is richer than Costas.

Another way of forming the comparative, usual with shorter words, is by changing the endings as follows:

M. -ος into -ότερος

F. -η or -α into -ότερη

N. -ο into -ότερο

e.g. δυνατός	δυνατότερος	stronger
μικρός	μικρότερος	smaller
ὡραῖος	ὡραιότερος	more beautiful
εὐκολός	εὐκολότερος	easier

A few adjectives form their comparative by changing the endings,

M. -ος into -ύτερος

F. -η or -α into -ύτερη

N. -ο into -ύτερο

e.g. καλός	καλύτερος	better
μεγάλος	μεγαλύτερος	bigger, greater, older

The comparative of κακός, bad, is χειρότερος, worse.

EXAMPLES

Ὁ ἀδελφός μου εἶναι πῶς δυνατός ἀπό τόν ἀδελφό σου,
My brother is stronger than your brother.

Ὁ Γιάννης εἶναι φτωχότερος ἀπό τόν Κώστα, John is poorer than Costas.

Αὐτό τό σπίτι εἶναι καλύτερο ἀπ' ἐκεῖνο,* This house is better than that one.

Αὐτό τό αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι πολύ χειρότερο ἀπό τό ἄλλο, This car is much worse than the other one.

The superlative

The superlative is formed by putting the definite article in front of the comparative. The superlative is followed by either the preposition *σέ* (σ') or the genitive case, e.g.

Ὁ Ἀντρέας εἶναι ὁ καλύτερος μαθητής στήν τάξη του,
Andrew is the best pupil in his class.

Ὁ πατέρας της εἶναι ὁ πῶς πλούσιος τῆς Ἀθήνας, Her father is the richest man in Athens.

Ἡ Ἑλένη ἦταν ἡ ὠραιότερη γυναῖκα τῆς Ἑλλάδας,
Helen was the most beautiful woman in Greece.

Some adjectives change the endings,

M. -ος into -ότατος

F. -η or -α into -ότατη

N. -ο into -ότατο

to express a superlative degree, e.g.

Τό πάρτυ του ἦταν λαμπρότατο, His party was most wonderful.

* The final -ο of *ἀπό* may be replaced by an apostrophe in front of a vowel.

EXERCISE 15

Translate:

1. Τό σπίτι σας εἶναι μικρότερο ἀπό τό δικό μας.
2. Ὁ Γιάννης εἶναι μεγαλύτερος ἀπό τόν Πέτρο.
3. Αὐτό εἶναι τό καλύτερο ἀπ' ὅλα.
4. Ὁ Πλάτων ἦταν ὁ μεγαλύτερος φιλόσοφος τῆς Ἑλλάδας.
5. Αὐτή ἡ δουλειά εἶναι δυσκολότατη.
6. Αὐτό τό κρασί εἶναι πῶς δυνατό ἀπ' ἐκεῖνο.
7. Ἡ Μόκκος εἶναι ὠραιότερη ἀλλά πολύ πῶς ζεστή ἀπό τήν Καβάλλα.
8. Ἡ Ἀγγλία εἶναι μεγαλύτερη ἀπό τήν Ἰρλανδία.

SUMMARY OF PRINCIPAL FORMS OF NOUNS

	M	F	N
		<i>Singular</i>	
Nom.	ὁ κῆπος	ἡ φωνή	τό γραφεῖο
Gen.	τοῦ κήπου	τῆς φωνῆς	τοῦ γραφείου
Acc.	τόν κήπο	τῇ φωνῇ	τό γραφεῖο
		<i>Plural</i>	
Nom.	οἱ κῆποι	οἱ φωνές	τά γραφεῖα
Gen.	τῶν κήπων	τῶν φωνῶν	τῶν γραφείων
Acc.	τούς κήπους	τίς φωνές	τά γραφεῖα
		<i>Singular</i>	
Nom.	ὁ ἐργάτης	ἡ καρδιά	τό παιδί
Gen.	τοῦ ἐργάτη	τῆς καρδιᾶς	τοῦ παιδιοῦ
Acc.	τόν ἐργάτη	τῇ καρδίᾳ	τό παιδί
		<i>Plural</i>	
Nom.	οἱ ἐργάτες	οἱ καρδιές	τά παιδιά
Gen.	τῶν ἐργατῶν	τῶν καρδιῶν	τῶν παιδιῶν
Acc.	τούς ἐργάτες	τίς καρδιές	τά παιδιά

VERBS

Verbs change to express person, number and time. They are divided into two general classes which may be termed Active and Passive.

Active are those ending in *-ω* in the first person singular of the present tense,* e.g. ἔχω, I have; θέλω, I want. These verbs are usually called Active because they mostly denote an action done by the subject.

Passive are those ending in *-μαι* in the first person singular of the present tense, e.g. διδάσκομαι, I am taught; φοβᾶμαι, I am afraid. These verbs are usually called Passive because they mostly denote an action suffered by the subject.

This last distinction is not, however, rigid. Thus ἔρχομαι, I come, has a Passive ending while it denotes an action done by the subject.

In other cases what a Greek would consider as a Passive verb is not so considered by an English person, e.g. θυμᾶμαι, I remember; στέκομαι, I stand.

ACTIVE VERBS

Most verbs belong to the Active class. These are divided into two further classes determined by the position of the accent.

I. Verbs not accented on the last syllable, e.g. ἔχω, I have; θέλω, I want; κλείω, I close.

II. Verbs accented on the last syllable, e.g. μπορῶ, I can; ἀπαντῶ, I answer.

* We shall be considering the form of the first person singular as the basic form of the verb.

I. Most verbs belong to the first class. They are divided into the following sub-classes according to the way they change the ending of the first person singular of the present tense to form the first person singular of the Indefinite tense.*

Ia. Verbs changing the ending -ω, -ζω or -νω, and -πτω into -σω, e.g. Pres. κλείω, I close; Indef. κλείσω. Pres. αρχίζω, I begin; Indef. αρχίσω. Pres. πιάνω, I take; Indef. πιάσω. Pres. πέφτω, I fall; Indef. πέσω.

Ib. Verbs changing the ending -βω, -νω (pronounced νο) or -πω into -ψω, e.g. Pres. κόβω, I cut; Indef. κόψω. Pres. δουλεύω, I work; Indef. δουλέψω. Pres. λείπω, I am away; Indef. λείψω.

Ic. Verbs changing the ending -ζω, -χνω, -χω and -γω into -ξω, e.g. Pres. αλλάζω, I change; Indef. αλλάξω. Pres. δείχνω, I show; Indef. δείξω. Pres. προσέχω, I notice; Indef. προσέξω. Pres. ανοίγω, I open; Indef. ανοίξω.

Id. Verbs that do not change anything, e.g. Pres. κάνω, I do, make; Indef. κάνω. Pres. ξέρω, I know; Indef. ξέρω. Pres. φέρω, I bring; Indef. φέρω.

Ie. Verbs undergoing several irregular changes. These irregular forms must be learned individually, as no simple rule can be given for their formation. In some cases the Indefinite form is completely different from that of the Present. These irregular verbs should be given thorough attention as most of them are very frequent words, e.g. Pres. λέγω, I say; Indef. πῶ. Pres. βλέπω, I see; Indef. δῶ. Pres. δίνω, I give; Indef. δόσω. Pres. πηγαίνω, I go; Indef. πᾶω.

II. Some verbs belong to the second class, i.e. they are accented on the last syllable. They are divided into the

* The Indefinite is roughly equivalent to the English Infinitive, e.g. I want to go (Θέλω νὰ πάω), and does not usually stand by itself. For its use see pages 67, 88, 145.

following sub-classes according to the way they change the final -ω of the first person singular of the Present to form the first person singular of the Indefinite.

IIa. Verbs changing -ω into -ήσω, e.g. Pres. ἀπαντῶ, I answer; Indef. ἀπαντήσω. τραβῶ, I pull, becomes τραβήξω* in the Indefinite. The great majority of verbs of the second class belong to this sub-class.

IIb. Verbs changing -ω into -άσω, e.g. Pres. γελῶ, I laugh; Indef. γελάσω.

Note that κοιτῶ, I look, becomes κοιτάξω in the Indefinite.

IIc. Verbs changing -ω into -έσω, e.g. μπορῶ, I can; Indef. μπορέσω. This is the only common verb belonging to this sub-class.

IId. Irregular verbs, e.g. περνῶ, I pass; Indef. περάσω.

PRESENT AND FUTURE

The Present tense which has been considered as the basic form of the verb is equivalent to the English Present tense as well as to the Present Continuous, e.g. κλείω, I close, or I am closing; δουλεύω, I work, or I am working; βλέπω, I see, or I am seeing.

To express an action that will take place in the future the particle *θά* is put in front of the Indefinite. In fact the Indefinite is hardly ever used by itself and cannot properly be translated as such; e.g. *θά* κλείσω, I shall close; *θά* δῶ, I shall see.

A Future Continuous event is expressed by putting *θα* in front of the Present form, e.g. *θα* κλείω, I shall be closing; *θα* δουλεύω, I shall be working; *θα* βλέπω, I shall be seeing.

* ξ and ψ are a shorter way of writing κσ and πσ respectively.

FORMATION OF THE INDEFINITE

Below are given the first person singular of the Present and Indefinite forms of the most common verbs in their various sub-classes.

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Indefinite</i>
Ia.	ἀκούω, I hear	ἀκούσω
	κλείω, I close	κλείσω
	ἀρχίζω, I begin	ἀρχίσω
	ἀποφασίζω, I decide	ἀποφασίσω
	γυρίζω, I turn	γυρίσω
	γνωρίζω, I know	γνωρίσω
	γεμίζω, I fill	γεμίσω
	ἐξετάζω, I examine	ἐξετάσω
	μοιάζω, I resemble	μοιάσω
	νομίζω, I think	νομίσω
	συνεχίζω, I continue	συνεχίσω
	φροντίζω, I care for	φροντίσω
	ἀφίνω, I leave	ἀφίσω
	ἀπλώνω, I spread	ἀπλώσω
	πιάνω, I take	πιάσω
	σηκώνω, I lift	σηκώσω
	φτάνω, I reach	φτάσω
	χάνω, I lose	χάσω
	πέφτω, I fall	πέσω
Ib.	ἀνάβω, I light	ἀνάψω
	κόβω, I cut	κόψω
	κρύβω, I hide	κρύψω
	δουλεύω, I work	δουλέψω
	μαζεύω, I collect	μαζέψω
	χορεύω, I dance	χορέψω
	λείπω, I am absent, away	λείψω

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Indefinite</i>
Ic.	κοιτάζω, I look (at)	κοιτάξω
	ἀλλάζω, I change	ἀλλάξω
	δείχνω, I show	δείξω
	ανοίγω, I open	ανοίξω
	προσέχω, I pay attention	προσέξω
	ὕπαρχω, I exist	ὕπαρξω
	ρίχνω, I throw	ρίξω
	ψάχνω, I search	ψάξω
Id.	ἔχω, I have	ἔχω
	κάνω, I do, make	κάνω
	ξέρω, I know	ξέρω
	φέρω, I bring, fetch	φέρω
	ἀνήκω, I belong	ἀνήκω
	προτείνω, I suggest	προτείνω
	ἀρέσω, I please, I am pleasing to	ἀρέσω
Ie.	βλέπω, I see	δῶ
	βρίσκω, I find	βρῶ
	λέγω, I say	πῶ
	δίνω, I give	δόσω
	πηγαίνω, I go	πάω
	παίρνω, I take	πάρω
	πίνω, I drink	πιῶ
	βάζω, I put	βάλω
	τρώγω, I eat	φάγω
	μπαίνω, I get in, go in	μπῶ
	μένω, I stay	μείνω
	φεύγω, I leave	φύγω
	καταλαβαίνω, I understand	καταλάβω
	βγαίνω, I go out	βγῶ
	ἀνεβαίνω, I go up	ἀνεβῶ
	κατεβαίνω, I go down	κατεβῶ

Present

- IIa. ἀπαντῶ, I answer
 ἀποχτῶ, I obtain
 ἀγαπῶ, I love
 ζῶ, I live
 ζητῶ, I seek
 κουνῶ, I move
 κρατῶ, I hold
 μιλῶ, I talk
 ξυπνῶ, I wake
 παρατῶ, I abandon
 παρακολουθῶ, I follow, attend
 προχωρῶ, I proceed
 προσπαθῶ, I try
 ρωτῶ, I ask
 σταματῶ, I stop
 συμφωνῶ, I agree
 φιλῶ, I kiss

- IIb. γελῶ, I laugh
 χαμογελῶ, I smile
 χαλῶ, I demolish, spoil
 κοιτῶ, I look (at)

- IIc. μπορῶ, I can

- IIId. περνῶ, I pass

Indefinite

- ἀπαντήσω
 ἀποχτήσω
 ἀγαπήσω
 ζήσω
 ζητήσω
 κουνήσω
 κρατήσω
 μιλήσω
 ξυπνήσω
 παρατήσω
 παρακολουθήσω
 προχωρήσω
 προσπαθήσω
 ρωτήσω
 σταματήσω
 συμφωνήσω
 φιλήσω

- γελάσω
 χαμογελάσω
 χαλάσω
 κοιτάξω

- μπορέσω

- περάσω

EXERCISE 16

Form the first person singular of the Indefinite of the following verbs:

1. γυρίζω 2. προσέχω 3. σταματῶ 4. ἀνάβω 5. θαρρῶ
 6. μπορῶ 7. μοιάζω 8. παρακολουθῶ 9. ζητῶ 10. πιάνω
 11. κρύβω 12. χαμογελῶ 13. φτάνω 14. προχωρῶ

15. ξυπνῶ 16. κόβω 17. γεμίζω 18. προσπαθῶ
 19. ξέρω 20. ζῶ 21. ρωτῶ 22. ἔχω 23. νομίζω
 24. μιλῶ 25. δουλεύω 26. δείχνω 27. προτείνω
 28. φεύγω 29. πίνω 30. καταλαβαίνω 31. λέγω
 32. περνῶ 33. βλέπω 34. δίνω 35. μένω.

EXERCISE 17

Which is the present form of the following Indefinite forms:

1. δειξω 2. φέρω 3. κρύψω 4. συνεχίσω 5. χορέψω
 6. ἀπαντήσω 7. φάγω 8. πῶ 9. κουνήσω
 10. γελάσω 11. ζητήσω 12. φροντίσω 13. προχωρήσω
 14. κοιτάξω 15. μπορέσω 16. ἔχω
 17. φτάσω 18. κάνω 19. ἐξετάσω 20. κλείσω
 21. κρατήσω 22. χαλάσω 23. προσπαθήσω 24. βάλω
 25. καταλάβω 26. δῶ.

VOCABULARY

- κλείω, I close
 ἀρχίζω, I start
 τὰ χρήματα, money
 παρακολουθῶ, I attend
 τό μάθημα, lesson
 ἡ μηχανική, engineering
 κάθε, every
 τό πιάνο, piano

- βλέπω, I see
 θέλω, I want
 γνωρίζω, I know
 τρώγω, I eat
 πίνω, I drink
 ἡ μπίρα, beer
 ἡ λίρα, pound

EXAMPLES

- Κλείω τὴν πόρτα, I close (I am closing) the door.
 Αρχίζω δουλειά στις οκτώ τό πρωί, I start work at eight in the morning.

Δέν έχω χρήματα, I haven't got any money.
 Παρακολουθῶ μαθήματα μηχανικῆς, I attend engineering lessons.
 Θέλω δέκα τσιγάρα, I want ten cigarettes.

EXERCISE 18

Translate:

1. Πηγαίνω στή δουλειά μέ αὐτοκίνητο.
2. Ἔχω μόνο τρεῖς λίρες.
3. Παρακολουθῶ μαθήματα πιάνου.
4. Βλέπω ἕνα ἀεροπλάνο.
5. Θέλω λίγο νερό.
6. Ἔχω ἕναν ἀδελφό καί δύο ἀδελφές.
7. Γνωρίζω τό θεῖο σας.
8. Τώρα τρώγω.

VOCABULARY

πηγαίνω, I go
 λέγω, I say
 δουλεύω, I work
 ἡ ἀλήθεια, truth
 τό φίλμ, film
 αὔριο, tomorrow
 μιλῶ, I talk, I speak
 τό θάρρος, courage
 τό ἀρνάκι, lamb
 ἡ χώρα, country
 τό θαῦμα, miracle

ἡ Ἀλίκη, Alice
 γνωρίζω, I turn, return
 ἡ Ἀνατολή, East
 ὁλόκερος, whole
 ἀπαντῶ, I answer
 ἐρώτησις, question
 ξυπνῶ, I wake up
 διαβάζω, I read
 ὡς, till
 τό ἀπόγευμα, afternoon
 τό κρασί, wine

EXAMPLES

Θά πάω στήν Ἀθήνα, I shall go to Athens.
 Θά πῶ τήν ἀλήθεια, I will tell the truth.

Θά πιῶ κρασί, I will drink wine.
 Θά δῶ ἕνα καλό φίλμ, I shall see a good film.
 Αὔριο θά δουλεύω ὅλη μέρα, Tomorrow I shall be working all day.

EXERCISE 19

Translate:

1. Θά μιλήσω μέ θάρρος.
2. Θά πάω στήν Ἀμερική.
3. Τό Σάββατο θά πάω στή θάλασσα.
4. Θά φάω ἀρνάκι ψητό.
5. Θά πάω στό σινεμά καί θά δῶ τήν Ἀλίκη στή Χώρα τῶν Θανμάτων.
6. Θά γυρίσω τήν Ἀνατολή ὁλόκερη.
7. Θά ἀπαντήσω στήν ἐρώτησή σου.
8. Αὔριο θά ξυπνήσω στίς ἑπτὰ τό πρωτ.
9. Αὔριο θά διαβάζω ἀπό τίς τρεῖς ὡς τίς ἑξι τό ἀπόγευμα.

PERSON AND NUMBER

Verbs change to denote person and number. They change their ending to show whether the person to which they refer is the speaker (first person) or the listener (second person) or anyone else (third person), and also whether it is one person (singular number) or more than one person (plural number).

The change in the ending of the verb affords a sufficient distinction of person and number and so the personal pronouns corresponding to the English I, you, he, etc. are usually omitted.

Up to now only the form of the first person singular has been examined. This form can be considered as the basic form of the verb from which we can derive all the other forms in the following way.

The second person (of the) singular (number) of both the Present and the Indef. is formed:*

1. by changing the final *-ω* of class I verbs into *-εις*, e.g. *κλείω*, I close; *κλείεις*, you close; *θέλω*, I want; *θέλεις*, you want; *ἀνάψω-ἀνάψεις*; *ρωτήσω-ρωτήσεις*.
2. by changing the final *-ῶ* of class II verbs into *-ᾶς*, e.g. *ἀπαντῶ*, I answer; *ἀπαντᾶς*, you answer; *ξυπνῶ*, I awake; *ξυπνᾶς*, you awake.

Some of these verbs, however, change into *-εῖς*, e.g. *ζῶ*, I live; *ζεῖς*, you live; *μπορῶ*, I can; *μπορεῖς*, you can. Such verbs are also, *θαρρῶ*, *προσπαθῶ*, etc. Some verbs, like *ζητῶ*, *συμφωνῶ*, etc., change into either *-ᾶς* or *-εῖς*.

* The second person of the singular corresponds to the old English *thou*, but it is commonly used when speaking informally or familiarly.

PERSON AND NUMBER

The third person singular is formed by omitting the final *-ς* of the second person, e.g. *κλείει*, he (she, it) closes; *θέλει*, he (she, it) wants; *ἀπαντᾷ*, he (she, it) answers; *ζει*, he (she, it) lives; *ἀνάγει*, etc. The first person plural is formed by changing the final *-ω* of the first person singular into *-ουμε*, e.g. *κλείω*, I close; *κλείουμε*, we close; *θέλω*, I want; *θέλουμε*, we want; *ἀπαντῶ*, I answer; *ἀπαντοῦμε*, we answer; *ἀγαπῶ*, I love; *ἀγαπούμε*, we love; *ἀνάψω-ἀνάψουμε*.

Many of those verbs which form the second person singular with *-ᾶς* form the first person plural with *-ᾶμε*, e.g. *μιλάς*, you talk; *μιλάμε*, we talk; *ξυπνᾶς*, you wake up; *ξυπνᾶμε*, we wake up; *ἀγαπᾶς*, you love; *ἀγαπᾶμε*, we love.

The second person plural is formed by changing the ending of the second person singular as follows:

- | | |
|------------------------|--|
| <i>-εις</i> | into <i>-ετε</i> , e.g. <i>κλείεις</i> , you close (sing.); <i>κλείετε</i> , you close. |
| <i>-ᾶς</i> | into <i>-ᾶτε</i> , e.g. <i>ρωτᾶς</i> , you ask; <i>ρωτᾶτε</i> , you ask. |
| <i>-εῖς</i> (accented) | into <i>εῖτε</i> , e.g. <i>μπορεῖς</i> , you can; <i>μπορεῖτε</i> , you can; <i>δεῖς-δεῖτε</i> . |

The third person plural is formed by changing the *ει* of the third person singular into *-ουν* and *-α* into *-ᾶν* or *-οῦν*, e.g. *ἔχω*, I have; *ἔχουν*, they have; *κουνῶ*, I move, *κουνᾶν*, they move; *ζῶ*, I live; *ζοῦν*, they live; *δόσω-δόσουν*. A final *-ε* may be added to these forms, e.g. *ἔχουνε*, they have; *ζοῦνε*, they live, etc.

FORMS OF THE PRESENT

I

έχω, I have
 έχεις, you have
 έχει, he has
 έχουμε, we have
 έχετε, you have
 έχουν, they have

II

γελώ, I laugh
 γελās, you laugh
 γελά, he laughs
 γελάμε, we laugh
 γελάτε, you laugh
 γελούν, they laugh

IIc

μπορώ, I can
 μπορείς, you can
 μπορεί, he can
 μπορούμε, we can
 μπορείτε, you can
 μπορούν, they can

VOCABULARY

τό τσάι, tea
 ό καφές, coffee
 άπόψε, tonight
 τό θέατρο, theatre
 γελώ, I laugh
 τό ζήτημα, question, problem
 τό παράθυρο, window
 ή πόλις, town
 πολλοί, a lot, many
 ή κρεβατοκάμαρα, bedroom
 τό ραδιόφωνο, radio
 ρωτώ, enquire
 τό φθινόπωρο, autumn

ή 'Αγγλική, English language
 ό όρίζοντας, horizon
 ή ήσυχία, quiet
 ή Γερμανία, Germany
 ή μουσική, music
 ή βάρκα, boat
 μένω, I stay
 τό ξενοδοχείο, hotel
 καταλαβαίνω, understand
 παρακαλώ, please
 τίποτε, nothing, anything
 εύχαριστώ, thanks!
 καπνίζω, I smoke
 γιατί, why

EXAMPLES

1. Πίνω τσάι, I drink tea.
2. Πίνετε τσάι ή καφέ; Do you drink tea or coffee?
3. 'Απόψε θά πάμε στό θέατρο, Tonight we shall go to the theatre.
4. Μή γελάτε. Τό ζήτημα είναι σοβαρό, Don't laugh, the matter is serious.
5. Τά παιδιά διαβάζουν στήν κρεβατοκάμαρα, The children read (or are reading) in the bedroom.
6. 'Ο Γιάννης θά μιλήσει άπό τό ραδιόφωνο, John will speak on the radio.
7. Έχεις ένα τσιγάρο; Have you got a cigarette?
8. Γιατί ρωτάς; Why do you ask?

EXERCISE 20

Translate:

1. Τό φθινόπωρο θά παρακολουθήσω μαθήματα 'Αγγλικής
2. Βλέπετε εκείνο τό άεροπλάνο στόν όρίζοντα;
3. Έχουμε λεφτά αλλά δέν έχουμε ήσυχία.
4. Θέλετε λίγο νερό;
5. 'Ο πατέρας θά πάει στή Γερμανία.
6. Ποό μένετε;
7. Μένω στό ξενοδοχείο 'Αστόρια.
8. Γνωρίζετε τό θείο μου; Ναι, αλλά δέν είναι φίλος μου.
9. Δέν καταλαβαίνω.
10. Τί θέλετε, παρακαλώ;
11. Τίποτε, εύχαριστώ.
12. Καπνίζω δέκα τσιγάρα τήν ήμέρα.
13. Γιατί γελάτε παρακαλώ;

EXERCISE 21

Translate:

1. I am closing the window.
2. We shall go to France.
3. They do not want tea.
4. I work in town.
5. Have you got much money?
6. I have (attend) music lessons.
7. Do you see a boat on the sea?
8. My father does (can) not see very far.
9. We will go to America and John will go to France.
10. Do you smoke?
11. I don't smoke.
12. We don't drink beer.
13. I want a glass of wine.
14. We want a house by the sea.
15. Tomorrow we shall go to Mykonos.
16. I don't want tea, I want coffee.

THE PAST TENSE

The first person singular of the Past tense is formed from the Indefinite by:

- (i) Changing the final ω into $-a$.
- (ii) Removing the accent to the third syllable from the end, e.g. Pres. *συνεχίζω*, I continue; Indef. *συνεχίσω*; Past *συνέχισα*, I continued. Pres. *δουλεύω*, I work; Indef. *δουλέψω*; Past *δούλεψα*, I worked. Pres. *σταματώ*; Indef. *σταματήσω*; Past *σταμάτησα*, I stopped. Pres. *ρωτώ*, I ask; Indef. *ρωτήσω*; Past *ρώτησα*, I asked.

Where there is no third syllable, as in two-syllable words of class I or one-syllable words of class II, an initial ϵ - (called an augment) is added to the Past form, e.g. Pres. *χάνω*, I lose; Indef. *χάσω*; Past *ἔχασα*, I lost. Pres. *ζῶ*, I live; Indef. *ζήσω*; Past *ἔζησα*, I lived.

The verb *ξέρω* takes η at the beginning: *ἤξερα*, I knew. Verbs of sub-class Ie (irregular verbs) form their Past tense in unusual ways which are, however, based on the form of the Indefinite. These forms should be learned individually. Here are the commonest verbs of this sub-class:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Past</i>	
<i>βλέπω</i>	<i>εἶδα</i>	I saw
<i>βρίσκω</i>	<i>βρῆκα</i>	I found
<i>λέγω</i>	<i>εἶπα</i>	I said
<i>δίνω</i>	<i>ἔδοσα</i>	I gave
<i>πηγαίνω</i>	<i>πῆγα</i>	I went
<i>παίρνω</i>	<i>πῆρα</i>	I took
<i>πίνω</i>	<i>ἤπια</i>	I drank

<i>Present</i>	<i>Past</i>	
βάζω	έβαλα	I put
τρώγω	έφαγα	I ate
μπαίνω	μπήκα	I entered
μένω	έμεινα	I stayed
φεύγω	έφυγα	I left
καταλαβαίνω	κατάλαβα	I understood
βγαίνω	βγήκα	I went out
άνεβαίνω	άνέβηκα	I went up
κατεβαίνω	κατέβηκα	I went down
έχω	είχα	I had

The other persons of the Past tense are formed by changing the final -α of the first person singular as follows:

<i>Singular</i>	
Second person into	-εις
Third person into	-ε
<i>Plural</i>	
First person into	-αμε
Second person into	-ατε
Third person into	-αν(ε).

e.g.

γύρισα, I returned	προχώρησα, I proceeded
γύρισες, you returned	προχώρησες, you proceeded
γύρισε, he returned	προχώρησε, he proceeded
γυρίσαμε, we returned	προχωρήσαμε, we proceeded
γυρίσατε, you returned	προχωρήσατε, you proceeded
γύρισαν, they returned	προχώρησαν, they proceeded
or	or
γυρίσανε, they returned	προχωρήσανε, they proceeded

Verbs which take the augment ε- (a vowel prefixed to the

verb) to form the Past tense usually drop it in the first and second persons plural. These forms can dispense with the augment as they have three syllables, e.g.

έχασα, I lost	έφυγα, I left
έχασες, you lost	έφυγες, you left
έχασε, he lost	έφυγε, he left
χάσαμε, we lost	φύγαμε, we left
χάσατε, you lost	φύγατε, you left
έχασαν, they lost	έφυγαν, they left
χάσανε, they lost	φύγανε, they left

EXERCISE 22

Form the Past tense of these verbs:

1. γυρίζω
2. νομίζω
3. μαζεύω
4. κόβω
5. φέρω
6. φτάνω
7. ψάχνω
8. βλέπω
9. κατεβαίνω
10. απαντώ
11. πηγαίνω
12. κρατώ
13. ρωτώ
14. μπορώ
15. κουνώ
16. σταματώ
17. ζώ
18. προχωρώ
19. τρώγω
20. μένω
21. χάνω
22. έχω.

The Past tense is one of the most frequent tenses in the language. It corresponds to both the English Past tense and the English Perfect. Thus, *Πήγα στο γιατρό* may mean according to the context, either *I went to the doctor* or *I have been to the doctor*.

VOCABULARY

ο άλλος, the other (one)	τό μέσο, middle
χαμογελάω, I smile	πρός, towards
σιωπηλός, silent	βγαίνω, I go out
άφηνω, I leave	κουνώ, I move
τό τζάκι, hearth	συνεχίζω, I continue
προχωρώ, I proceed	ή κουβέντα, talk

διάφορος, different
 παίρνω, I take
 τό γράμμα, letter
 ὁ ἀξιωματικός, officer
 φεύγω, I go away
 ἡ συγκέντρωση, meeting
 τό αἷμα, blood
 ἀνεβαίνω, I go up
 ξέρω, I know
 πολλά, a lot
 ὁ χοντρός, fat man
 ἀνάβω, light
 νωρίς, early
 πίσω, back
 ἀκούω, I hear

ὁ καιρός, weather
 πολὺς, much, long (of
 time)
 στέλνω, I send
 τό πακέτο, packet
 ζῶ, I live
 ὁ χρόνος, year
 ἡ Νεάπολη, Naples
 πάντα, always
 χτές, yesterday
 τό τραῖνο, train
 ἡ Λευκοσία, Nicosia
 σταματῶ, I stop
 βάζω, I put
 ὕστερα, then, later

EXAMPLES

Πῆγε στήν Αἴγυπτο μέ κάμποσα λεφτά, He went to Egypt
 with a lot of money.

Ὁ ἄλλος χαμογέλασε, The other one smiled.

Γιά κάμποση ὥρα ἔμειναν σιωπηλοί, For a long time they
 remained silent.

Ὁ Ἀντρέας δέν ἀπάντησε, Andrew did not answer.

Ἐκλείσε τὰ μάτια του, He closed his eyes.

Ἀφίσε τό ποτήρι του στό τζάκι καί προχώρησε πρὸς τό
 μέσο τοῦ δωματίου, He left his glass on the mantelpiece
 and advanced to the middle of the room.

Βγήκαν κι' οἱ τρεῖς στή βεράντα, They all three went out
 on to the veranda.

EXERCISE 23

Translate:

1. Οἱ ἀξιωματικοὶ ἔφυγαν ἀπὸ τή συγκέντρωση.
2. Τό αἷμα ἀνέβηκε στό κεφάλι του.
3. Ὁ ἄνθρωπος αὐτός ἤξερε πολλά.
4. Ὁ χοντρός δέν ἀπάντησε.
5. Ἐστειλα ἓνα πακέτο στή μητέρα μου.
6. Ἐξησαν τρία χρόνια στή Νεάπολη.
7. Ὁ πατέρας μου εἶχε πάντα λεφτά.
8. Χτές εἶδα τό Γιώργο στό τραῖνο.
9. Ἡ κυρία Λαμπριδῆ κούνησε τό κεφάλι της.
10. Στήν πόρτα ἡ Ἑλένα γύρισε πίσω.
11. Ἐμείνα στό ξενοδοχεῖο.
12. Πῆγε κοντά του καί τοῦ μίλησε.
13. Συνέχισαν τήν κουβέντα τους πάνω σέ διάφορα
 ζητήματα.
14. Πῆρα τό γράμμα σου.
15. Ἄναψε ἓνα σπύγιο.
16. Γύρισε νωρίς στό σπίτι.

EXERCISE 24

Translate:

1. He went to Italy.
2. We went to Germany.
3. They went to England.
4. You went to France.
5. Did you (sing.) go to America?
6. Did you go to the theatre yesterday?
7. Have you heard?
8. Peter did not understand.
9. They stayed at our house for a long time.
10. I saw your brother in Nicosia.

11. I have read Anna Karenina.
12. He stopped for a while (λίγο), he smiled and then said . . .
13. She closed her eyes.
14. Yesterday I woke up very early.
15. They put the car in the garage.
16. He left yesterday morning.

IMPERFECT

The Imperfect tense is formed in the same way as the Past tense but by using as basis the Present instead of the Indefinite. Verbs of class I conform rigidly to this pattern, e.g.

<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>	
λέγω	ἔλεγα	I was saying
πηγαίνω	πήγαινα	I was going
μένω	ἔμενα	I was staying
καταλαβαίνω	καταλάβαινα	I was understanding
πέφτω	ἔπεφτα	I was falling
ανοίγω	ἄνοιγα	I was opening
θέλω	ἤθελα	I wanted

Verbs of class II change the final -*ō* of the Present into -*oṽsa* (accented) or -*aya** (unaccented) and drop the augment, e.g.

ζητῶ	ζητοῦσα	ζήτηγα	I was looking for
μιλῶ	μιλοῦσα	μίλαγα	I was talking
ζῶ	ζοῦσα		I was living
κρατῶ	κρατοῦσα	κράταγα	I was holding
προσπαθῶ	προσπαθοῦσα		I was trying

FORMS OF THE IMPERFECT

ἔλεγα	πήγαινα	κρατοῦσα
ἔλεγεσ	πήγαινες	κρατοῦσεσ
ἔλεγε	πήγαινε	κρατοῦσε

* The suffix -*aya* is used only in two-syllabled words. It is not so frequent as the other suffix.

λέγαμε	πηγαίναμε	κρατούσαμε
λέγατε	πηγαίνατε	κρατούσατε
έλεγαν ογ	πήγαιναν ογ	κρατούσαν ογ
λέγανε	πηγαίνανε	κρατούσανε

Note that when a final *-ε* is added to the third person plural the augment is dropped.

The Imperfect denotes a continuous event in the past, e.g.

**Η νύχτα έπεφτε δροσερή,* The night was coming down cool.

Ζητούσε την αδελφή του, He was looking for his sister.
Μιλούσαν για πολλή ώρα, They were talking for a long time.

VOCABULARY

φτάνω, I reach	ψυχρά, coldly
τό κέντρο, club	μαζί, together
ό χορός, dance	προσπαθώ, try
κοιτάζω, look	βρίσκω, I find
καθώς, as	πνευματικός, mental
τραγουδάω, I sing	τό επίπεδο, level
τρέχω, I run	ένω, while
πέφτω, I fall	ή σκάλα, staircase
χάμω, on the ground	ή στιγμή, moment
ήσυχος, quiet	καλά, well
γκρίζος, grey	σαχλός, inane, fatuous
τό μυαλό, brain	

EXERCISE 25

Translate:

1. **Από ένα κέντρο έφτανε μουσική χοροϋ.*
2. **Η Λιλίκα δέν καταλάβαινε.*

3. **Εκείνη τόν κοιτάζε στά μάτια.*
4. *Καθώς πήγαινα στή δουλειά είδα τό Γιώργο.*
5. *Τραγουδοϋσε δλο τό απόγευμα.*
6. *Καθώς έτρεχα έπεσα χάμω.*
7. **Ο χοντρος έμενε ήσυχος.*
8. *Μιλούσε μέ τό κορίτσι μέ τά γκρίζα μάτια.*
9. *Οι άλλοι δέ μιλούσαν.*
10. *Τό μυαλό του δούλευε ψυχρά.*
11. *Δέν έμεναν μαζί τους.*
12. *Προσπαθοϋσε νά βρεϊ τό πνευματικό επίπεδο του παιδιου.*
13. **Ενώ ανέβαινε τή σκάλα άκουσε δυνατές φωνές.*
14. **Ο Χαράλαμπος έπινε μόνος του στο μπαρ.*
15. **Ο *Αλκης άναβε εκείνη τή στιγμή τό τσιγάρο του.*
16. **Από μέρες ή μηχανή του αυτοκινήτου του δέν πήγαινε καλά.*
17. **Εβρισκε σαχλό τό νεαρό.*

THE USE OF *νά*

Intention, hope, desire and the like are expressed by using the particle *νά* in front of (1) the Present, (2) the Indefinite and (3) the Imperfect as follows:

1. The particle *νά* in front of the Present tense expresses a continuous intention, etc., e.g. *Θέλω νά δουλεύω έξι ώρες τήν ήμέρα*, I want to be working six hours a day. *Άρχισε νά τραγουδά*, He started singing.
2. The particle *νά* in front of the Indefinite expresses a non-continuous future intention, etc. This is the most frequent construction of this kind, e.g. *Έλπίζω νά φτάσω στήν Άθήνα στίς τρείς μ.μ.*, I hope to arrive at Athens at 3 p.m. *Μπορώ νά πάρω ένα τσιγάρο*; May I take a cigarette?
3. The particle *νά* with the Imperfect expresses a past intention, etc. Such constructions follow a previous Imperfect tense, e.g. *Χτές τό βράδυ ήθελα νά πήγαω στο θέατρο αλλά δέν μπόρεσα*, Last night I wanted to go to the theatre but I did not manage to.

It is obvious that the above constructions follow verbs such as *θέλω*, *μπορώ*, *ελπίζω*, etc. The same applies to certain verbs which are commonly used only in the third person singular and which correspond to English phrases consisting of "it is" and an adjective, e.g. *πρέπει*, it is necessary; *άξίζει*, it is worth while, etc.; e.g. *Πρέπει νά πηγαίνω τώρα*, I must be going now; *Πρέπει νά πάω στό γιατρό στίς τέσσερεις καί τριάντα*, I must go to the doctor at 4.30.

VOCABULARY

<i>μπορώ</i> , I can	<i>ή Άκρόπολις</i> , Acropolis
<i>πρέπει</i> , it is necessary	<i>χάνω</i> , I lose
<i>αγαπώ</i> , I love	<i>ή εὐτυχία</i> , happiness
<i>τό ταξί</i> , taxi	<i>άμέσως</i> , immediately
<i>άξίζει</i> , it is worth it	<i>τό σχολείο</i> , school
<i>χωρίς</i> , without	<i>τά σταφύλια</i> , grapes
<i>τό φλυτζάνι</i> , cup	<i>τό τσάι</i> , tea

EXERCISE 26

Translate:

1. *Μπορώ νά πάω αύριο*;
2. *Ήθελε νά μιλήσει αλλά δέ μπόρουσε*.
3. *Τώρα πρέπει νά φύγετε*.
4. *Δέν ξέρω νά μιλώ καλά αλλά αυτό θέλω νά πώ*, «Όλοι αγαπούμε τή δουλειά μας».
5. *Μπορείτε νά πάρετε ένα ταξί*.
6. *Ό Ζήνων άρχισε νά τρέχει*.
7. *Δέν άξίζει νά πάτε στήν Άθήνα χωρίς νά δείτε τήν Άκρόπολη*.
8. *Δέ μπόρουσε νά κλείσει μάτι*.
9. *Τί θέλεις νά πεις*;
10. *Δέ θέλω νά πώ τίποτε*.
11. *Δέν ήθελε νά χάσει τήν εὐτυχία του*.
12. *Πρέπει νά φύγεις άμέσως*.

EXERCISE 27

1. I don't want to go to school.
2. May I have a cup of tea, please?
3. Can you give me a glass of water?
4. He didn't want to go to the pictures with you.

5. I must read this book tonight.
6. He started to laugh.
7. I want to eat grapes.
8. They did not want to lose their money.

THE PERFECT TENSES

The Present Perfect tense is formed by the auxiliary verb *έχω* conjugated as usual, and a form of the main verb which is identical with the third person singular of the Indefinite, e.g.

<i>έχω</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	I have lost
<i>έχεις</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	you have lost
<i>έχει</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	he has lost
<i>έχουμε</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	we have lost
<i>έχετε</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	you have lost
<i>έχουν</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	they have lost

The Past Perfect tense is formed in the same way as the Present Perfect but by replacing *έχω* by the Past form *είχα*, e.g.

<i>είχα</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	I had lost
<i>είχες</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	you had lost
<i>είχε</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	he had lost
<i>είχαμε</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	we had lost
<i>είχατε</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	you had lost
<i>είχαν</i>	<i>χάσει</i> ,	they had lost

The Present Perfect tense is not as common in Greek as it is in English, mainly because the work of the English Perfect is usually done by the Past tense in Greek, e.g.

Have you seen my brother, *Είδες τόν αδελφό μου;*

The Present Perfect tense is used to denote an event of the past which has a bearing on the present, e.g.

Δέ θέλω άλλο κρασί. Έχω πιει πολύ, I do not want any more wine. I have drunk a lot.

The Past Perfect tense is more frequent than the Present Perfect. It denotes an event of the past which occurred before another event of the past, e.g.

Πῆγα στό σπίτι του ἀλλά ἐκεῖνος εἶχε φύγει, I went to his house but he had left.

VOCABULARY

<i>ἰ, ἐκπληξη</i> , surprise	<i>τό ἔργο</i> , work
<i>σβύνω</i> , I put out (the light)	<i>ἡ τέχνη</i> , art
<i>ὀλότελα</i> , completely	<i>περιμένω</i> , I wait
<i>ὁ θυμός</i> , anger	<i>τά νέα</i> , news
<i>ἀποχτῶ</i> , I acquire	<i>ποτέ</i> , never
	<i>ἐκεῖ</i> , there

EXERCISE 28

Translate:

1. *Ἔχω χάσει ὅλα μου τά χρήματα.*
2. *Ἡ ἐκπληξη εἶχε σβύσει ὀλότελα τό θυμό του.*
3. *Ἔχασε τήν ὥρα του ἀλλά εἶχε ἀποχτήσει ἕνα καλό φίλο.*
4. *Δέν ἔχω δεῖ αὐτό τό ἔργο τέχνης.*
5. *Εἶχε ἀνάψει τό τσιγάρο του καί περιμένε.*
6. *Δέν εἶχαν ἀκούσει τά νέα.*
7. *Δέν εἶχες κλείσει τήν πόρτα.*
8. *Δέν ἔχω πάει ποτέ μου ἐκεῖ.*

THE IMPERATIVE

The Imperative form is another significant variation of the verb. It expresses command or request and occurs in the second person. In the singular it is formed by changing the final *-ω* of the Indefinite into *-ε* and removing the accent to the previous syllable whenever there is one, e.g. Indef. *ἀρχίσω*; Imper. *ἄρχισε*, start. Indef. *προσπαθήσω*; Imper. *προσπάθησε*, try. Indef. *δόσω*; Imper. *δόσε*, give. Indef. *βάλω*; Imper. *βάλε*, put. In the plural it is formed by changing *-ω* into *-τε* or sometimes *-ετε*, i.e. by using the form of the second person plural, *ἀρχίστε* or *ἀρχίσετε*, start; *προσπαθήστε*, try; *δόστε*, give; *βάλτε*, put.

Some monosyllable forms add a final *ς* to the Imperative of the singular which may be retained in front of the ending of the plural, e.g. *πές*, say; *δές*, see; *πέστε*, say (pl.).

Some of class II verbs may replace the singular ending *-ησε* or *-ασε* by the ending *α*, e.g. *προχώρησε* or *προχώρα*, proceed; *χαμογέλασε* or *χαμογέλα*, smile; *μίλησε* or *μίλα*, speak.

The plural of such forms ends in *-ᾱτε* accented, e.g. *μιλάτε*, speak; *χαμογελάτε*, smile.

Another way of forming the Imperative, especially when the command implies a continuous event, is to use the form of the Present as the basis and treat it in the same way as the Indefinite, e.g. *γράφε*, write, or write and keep on writing; *βλέπε*, see, or see and keep seeing; *γράφετε*, write (pl.); *βλέπετε*, see (pl.). In the case of verbs of class II the final *-ω* of the Present is changed into *-α* and the accent is removed to the previous syllable. These forms are not different from the non-continuous forms, e.g. *προχώρα*, proceed; *σταμάτα*, stop.

Some common but irregular Imperatives are *ἔλα*, come, pl. *ἐλάτε*, come; *ἄσε*, pl. *ἄστε*, abandon (leave alone); *ἀνέβα*, go up, *κατέβα*, go down.

Another way of expressing command or request is by using *νά* and the second person of the Indefinite, e.g. *νά γράφεις*, (you must) write; *νά γράφετε*, (you must) write (pl.). In the case of a more continuous event *νά* is used with the Present, e.g. *νά γράφεις*, you must be writing; *νά γράφετε*, you must be writing, (pl.).

Negative command or request is expressed by *μή* and the second person of the Indefinite, e.g. *μή γράφεις*, do not write; *μή γράφετε* (pl.). For continuous events *μή* is used with the Present, e.g. *μή γράφεις*, do not go on writing; *μή γράφετε* (pl.). The particle *νά* may also precede the *μή*, e.g. *νά μή γράφεις*, do not write.

VOCABULARY

<i>ἄσε</i> , leave	<i>κάτω</i> , down
<i>τό ἄστεϊο</i> , joke	<i>γρήγορα</i> , quickly
<i>φέρω</i> , bring	<i>τά αὐτιά</i> , ears
<i>γράφω</i> , I write	<i>ρίχνω</i> , I throw
<i>σιγά</i> , slowly	<i>ἡ μπάλα</i> , ball
<i>κατεβαίνω</i> , I go down	

EXAMPLES

**Ἐλα ἔδῳ*, Come here.
Πήγαινε ἐκεῖ, Go there.
**Ακοῦστε τί θά σᾶς πῶ*, Listen to what I am going to say to you.
Εύπνα, Wake up.
Νά φύγεις, Go away.
Μή προχωρήσεις, Do not proceed.

EXERCISE 29

Translate:

1. *Κλείσε τὰ μάτια σου.*
2. *Κλείστε τὰ μάτια σας.*
3. **Ἀσε τὰ ἄστεϊα.*
4. *Γιά δές τί ἔφερα.*
5. *Πήγαινε στή δουλειά σου.*
6. **Ἐλα νά δεῖς μέ τὰ μάτια σου.*
7. *Εύπνα καί εἶναι ἡ ὥρα δέκα.*
8. *Γράψε τό ὄνομά σου.*
9. *Σταμάτα ἔδῳ.*
10. **Αρχίστε νά τραγουδάτε.*
11. *Νά γράφεις αὐτά τὰ γράμματα.*
12. *Νά πᾶτε στό θεῖο σας.*
13. *Νά μείνεις ἔδῳ.*
14. *Μή σβύσεις τό φῶς.*
15. *Μή πεις τίποτε.*
16. *Νά μή φύγεις.*
17. *Νά μή πᾶτε τώρα.*
18. *Μιλᾶτε σιγά, παρακαλῶ.*
19. **Ἀνέβα τή σκάλα.*
10. *Κατέβα κάτω.*

EXERCISE 30

Translate:

1. Do not run.
2. Run quickly.
3. Go slowly.
4. Listen to your father.
5. Close your ears.
6. Open the door.
7. Do not laugh (pl.).

8. Do not eat (sing.).
9. Go to your house.
10. Write.
11. Do not write.
12. You must not drink a lot of wine.
13. Do not talk.
14. Do not move your hands.
15. Stay here for half an hour.
16. Throw the ball.
17. Continue the story.
18. Do not leave me alone.

THE PRONOUNS 'HIM', 'HER', 'IT' AND 'THEM'

Nouns which are used as objects of verbs may be replaced by certain pronouns. As such nouns are mostly in the accusative case the pronouns which replace them are also in the accusative. One such pronoun, that of the third person, has three forms corresponding to the three classes of the noun. These forms are identical with the accusative of the three definite articles. They are:

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
(M) <i>τόν</i> , him	<i>τούς</i> , them
(F) <i>τήν</i> , her	<i>τίς</i> , them
(N) <i>τό</i> , it	<i>τά</i> , them

The above pronouns literally stand for nouns when the context makes the meaning clear. They are put in front of the verb, except when it is in the imperative, e.g.

Είδες τόν κήπο; *Τόν είδα*, Have you seen the garden?
I have seen it.

Είδες τή Μαίρη; *Τήν είδα*, Have you seen Mary? I
have seen her.

Είδες τό βιβλίο μου; *Τό είδα*, Have you seen my book?
I have seen it.

Ἀγαπᾷς τούς ἀδελφούς σου; *Τούς ἀγαπῶ*, Do you love
your brothers? I love them.

Ἐκλείσες τίς πόρτες; *Τίς ἔκλεισα*, Have you closed the
doors? I have closed them.

Πῆρες τά γράμματά μου; *Τά πήρα*, Did you receive my
letters? I received them.

Πάρε αυτό τό ποτήρι. Κράτα το καλά, Take this glass.
Hold it carefully.

Σταμάτα τους, Stop them.

Σταμάτα την, Stop her.

The genitive singular form of the third person pronoun is again identical with that of the definite article. In the plural it is identical with the accusative of the M article.

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
(M) τοῦ	τούς
(F) τῆς	τούς
(N) τοῦ	τούς

The genitive is used when the verb may take two objects. In such cases the object which can be replaced by a prepositional construction is in the genitive case, and the other object is in the accusative. This happens whether the objects are nouns or pronouns, e.g.

Ἔδωσα τοῦ Γιώργου ἓνα βιβλίο, I gave George a book.

The genitive could be replaced as follows:

Ἔδωσα ἓνα βιβλίο στό Γιώργο, I gave a book to George.

When the objects are pronouns the genitive is put in front of the accusative and also in front of the verb, e.g.

τοῦ τό ἔδωσα, I gave it to him (literally = to him it I gave).

τῆς εἶπε μιὰν ἱστορία, he told her a story; *τῆς εἶπε,* he told her.

θά σοῦ δώσει δέκα δραχμές, he will give you ten drachmas.

τοῦ τό ἔγραψα, I wrote it to him (or for him).

When the verb is in the imperative the pronouns are put

after it and drop the accent or remove it to the previous syllable,* e.g.

Δόσε της λίγο νερό, Give her some water.

Πάρε μου ἓνα βιβλίο, Get a book for me.

* The accent is removed when the previous word has the accent on the third syllable from the end, e.g. *Ἀνοιξέ τον τήν πόρτα,* Open the door for him.

THE PRONOUNS 'ME', 'YOU', 'US'

The first and second persons of the above pronoun are:

Singular	Plural
1. <i>μου</i>	<i>μᾶς</i>
2. <i>σου</i>	<i>σᾶς</i>

The first and second persons of the accusative case are:

Singular	Plural
1. <i>μέ</i>	<i>μᾶς</i>
2. <i>σέ</i>	<i>σᾶς</i>

EXAMPLES

Μοῦ εἶπε, He told me.

Σέ εἶδα, I saw you.

Θά σου στείλω τά πράματα, I shall send you the things.

Σᾶς εὐχαριστῶ, I thank you.

Κοίταξέ με στά μάτια, Look me in the eyes.

Μή μου τηλεφωνήσεις, Do not telephone to me.

Δόσε μου ἓνα τσιγάρο, Give me a cigarette.

Μᾶς ἔφερε πολλά πράματα, He brought (to) us many things.

Θά σᾶς πάρω στήν Ἰταλία, I will take you to Italy.

The genitive of the pronoun (without a written accent) may also be used after certain prepositions, adverbs or adjectives, e.g. *μαζί μου*, with me; *κοντά του*, near him; *πάνω σου*, on you; *ποτέ μου*, never (in my life); *μόνος του*, alone (by himself); *δικός μου*, mine.*

The genitive is also used after words denoting greeting.

* See page 42.

PRONOUNS: 'ME', 'YOU', 'US'

101

e.g. *Καλημέρα σας*, Good morning to you; *Καληνύκτα σας*, Good night; *Γειά σου*, Good-bye (to one person); *Γειά σας*, Good-bye (to several persons).

VOCABULARY

<i>ξοδεύω</i> , I spend	<i>ἡ ἀλήθεια</i> , truth
<i>πιάνω</i> , I take hold of (grasp)	<i>πιστεύω</i> , I believe
<i>ἡ ποιότητα</i> , quality	<i>νομίζω</i> , I think
<i>ιδιωτικός</i> , private	<i>γύρω</i> , round
<i>ἡ θέση</i> , position	<i>τηλεφωνῶ</i> , I ring up
<i>ἀγοράζω</i> , I buy	<i>δίνω</i> , I give
<i>τό βιβλίο</i> , book	<i>τό γραμματόσημο</i> , stamp
<i>ὁ Ρώσος</i> , Russian	<i>τό κομμάτι</i> , piece
<i>σφίγγω</i> , I squeeze	<i>τό χαρτί</i> , paper
<i>δίπλα</i> , beside	<i>δείχνω</i> , I show, point at
<i>ψάχνω</i> , I look for	<i>κάνω</i> , I make, do
<i>παρᾶνω</i> , I abandon	<i>λένε</i> ,* they call, say
<i>φωνάζω</i> , I cry	

EXERCISE 31

Translate:

1. *Εἶχε πολλά χρήματα ἀλλά τά ξόδεψε.*
2. *Σέ ξέρω πολύ καλά.*
3. *Μέ λένε Λίλιαν.*
4. *Τόν ἔπιασε ἀπό τό χέρι καί τοῦ μίλησε.*
5. *Τόν ρωτοῦσε γιά τήν ποιότητα.*
6. *Ὁ πατέρας μου μέ ἔστειλε σέ ιδιωτικό σχολεῖο.*

* The verb *λέγω* or *λέω* may also be declined as follows:

<i>λέω</i> , I say	<i>λέμε</i> , we say
<i>λές</i> , you say	<i>λέτε</i> , you say
<i>λέει</i> , he says	<i>λένε</i> , they say

In the same way the second person singular of *θέλω*, I want, may also be *θές*, you want.

7. Δέν τό περιμένε.
8. Τόν κοίταξε στά μάτια.
9. Τόν έβαλε στή θέση του.
10. Ἀγόρασα ένα βιβλίο καί τό διάβασα σέ μιὰ μέρα.
11. Δέν τό πιστένε.
12. Σέ παρακολουθῶ γιά πολόν καιρό.
13. Σέ νόμιζα Ρῶσσο.
14. Τοῦ ἔσφιξε τό χέρι.
15. Ἔμενε δίπλα του.
16. Δέν τό ἔχω δεῖ ποτέ μου.
17. Δέν τήν εἶχε καταλάβει.
18. Ἔγραψε νά τόν βρεῖ.
19. Παράτα με.
20. Αὔριο, ξύπνα με νωρίς.
21. Ἄσε με νά φύγω.
22. Τόν εἶδε καί τοῦ φώναξε.
23. Πές μου τήν ἀλήθεια.
24. Μή μου τά λές αὐτά.
25. Τήν βλέπεις;
26. Γιατί μου τά λές αὐτά;
27. Θέλεις νά σοῦ δείξω τόν κήπο;
28. Μένουν μαζί μας.
29. Σᾶς γνωρίζω ἀπό καιρό.
30. Δέ θά τό κάνεις.
31. Πήγαινε καί σέ περιμένουν.
32. Ἔτρεχαν γύρω του.
33. Ἔχω νά σοῦ πῶ κάμποσα ἄλλα.
34. Δέ μπορῶ νά τό κάνω.
35. Γιατί τόν ἀφίστατε νά φύγει;
36. Τηλεφώνησέ μου αὔριο τό πρωτῆ.
37. Δός μου τρία γραμματόσημα.
38. Θά στό πῶ. (= Θά σοῦ τό πῶ.)

EXERCISE 32

Translate:

1. She turned and looked at him.
2. He did not tell me anything.
3. Go by yourself (alone).
4. Come beside me.
5. Fetch me a piece of paper.
6. They call me.
7. What did father say to you?
8. They asked him many questions.
9. Do ring me tonight.
10. Show me the garden.
11. You must always tell the truth.
12. I don't believe you.
13. Give me two bottles of beer.
14. I do not know him.
15. They didn't see him.
16. All the family is waiting for you.
17. Get a taxi for me.
18. Talk to me about this affair.
19. He went near them.
20. Good morning to you.

SUMMARY OF PRINCIPAL FORMS OF ACTIVE VERBS

I

<i>Present</i>	<i>Indefinite</i>	<i>Past</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>
Sing.			
1. ἀρχίζω	ἀρχίσω	ἀρχισα	ἀρχίζα
2. ἀρχίζεις	ἀρχίσεις	ἀρχισες	ἀρχίζεις
3. ἀρχίζει	ἀρχίσει	ἀρχισε	ἀρχίζει
Plural			
1. ἀρχίζουμε	ἀρχίσουμε	ἀρχίσαμε	ἀρχίζαμε
2. ἀρχίζετε	ἀρχίσετε	ἀρχίσατε	ἀρχίζατε
3. ἀρχίζουν	ἀρχίσουν	ἀρχισαν	ἀρχίζουν

II

Sing.			
1. σταματῶ	σταματήσω	σταμάτησα	σταματοῦσα
2. σταματᾷς	σταματήσεις	σταμάτησες	σταματοῦσες
3. σταματᾷ	σταματήσει	σταμάτησε	σταματοῦσε
Plural			
1. σταματοῦμε	σταματήσουμε	σταματήσαμε	σταματοῦσαμε
2. σταματᾶτε	σταματήσετε	σταματήσατε	σταματοῦσατε
3. σταματοῦν	σταματήσουν	σταμάτησαν	σταματοῦσαν

PASSIVE VERBS

Passive verbs are of two classes corresponding to the two classes of Active verbs:

I. Those ending in *-ομαι*.

II. Those ending in *-οῦμαι*, *-ᾶμαι* or *-ιέμαι*.

I. The Present tense of verbs of this class is conjugated as follows:

ἐξετάζομαι, I am examined
ἐξετάζεσαι, you are examined
ἐξετάζεται, he is examined
ἐξεταζόμαστε, we are examined
ἐξετάζεστε, you are examined
ἐξετάζονται, they are examined

Passive verbs can be grouped in approximately the same sub-classes as Active verbs. These sub-classes determine the form of the Indefinite in the following way:

Ia. Verbs of this class form the Indefinite by changing

-ομαι into *-σθῶ**
-ζομαι into *-σθῶ*
-νομαι into *-θῶ*

e.g. κλείομαι, I am closed; Indef. κλεισθῶ.
γνωρίζομαι, I am known; Indef. γνωρισθῶ.
ἐξετάζομαι, I am examined; Indef. ἐξετασθῶ.
χάνομαι, I am lost; Indef. χαθῶ.

* Final *-θῶ*, etc., may be replaced by *-τῶ*, etc.

Ib. Verbs of this class form the Indefinite by changing

-βομαι	into -φθῶ
-νομαι	into -νθῶ
(pronounced vome)	(pronounced ftho)

e.g. κρύβομαι, I am hiding; Indef. κρυφθῶ.
μαζεύομαι, I am picked up; Indef. μαζευθῶ.

Ic. Verbs of this class form the Indefinite by changing
-ζομαι, -γομαι, -χομαι, -χομαι, into -χθῶ.

e.g. ἀλλάζομαι, I am changed; Indef. ἀλλαχθῶ.
ἀνοίγομαι, I am opened; Indef. ἀνοιχθῶ.
δείχνομαι, I am shown; Indef. δειχθῶ.
βρέχομαι, I get wet; Indef. βρεχθῶ.

Id. Verbs of this class change -ομαι into -θῶ.

e.g. φέρομαι, I am brought; Indef. φερθῶ.

Ie. Verbs of this class being irregular form the Indefinite in the following individual ways:

βρίσκομαι, I am found;	Indef. βρεθῶ.
δίδνομαι, I am given;	Indef. δοθῶ.
παίρνομαι, I am taken;	Indef. παρθῶ.
στέκομαι, I stand;	Indef. σταθῶ.
βάζομαι, I am put;	Indef. βαλθῶ.
τρώγομαι, I am eaten;	Indef. φαγωθῶ.
ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, I understand;	Indef. ἀντιληφθῶ.
φαίνομαι, I seem;	Indef. φανῶ.
χαίρομαι, I am glad;	Indef. χαρῶ.

The Indefinite is conjugated like Active verbs of class IIc,

e.g.

βρεθῶ	βρεθοῦμε
βρεθεῖς	βρεθεῖτε
βρεθεῖ	βρεθοῦν

The Past tense is formed by changing the final -ῶ of the Indefinite into -ηκα and removing the accent to the third syllable from the end, e.g.

Indefinite	Past	
ἐξεταστῶ	ἐξετάστηκα	I was examined
κλειστῶ	κλείστηκα	I was closed
χαθῶ	χάθηκα	I was lost
κρυφτῶ	κρύφτηκα	I hid myself
προσεχτῶ	προσέχτηκα	I was noticed
βρεθῶ	βρέθηκα	I was found
φανῶ	φάνηκα	I appeared
χαρῶ	χάρηκα	I was glad

The Past tense is conjugated like the Past tense of Active verbs, e.g.

Singular

βρέθηκα, I was found
βρέθηκες, you were found
βρέθηκε, he was found

Plural

βρεθήκαμε, we were found
βρεθήκατε, you were found
βρέθηκαν, they were found

The Imperfect tense is formed by changing the -ομαι of the Present into -όμουν, e.g.

Present

Imperfect

αἰσθάνομαι	αἰσθανόμουν	I was feeling
χάνομαι	χανόμουν	I was being lost
ἐξετάζομαι	ἐξετάζόμουν	I was examined
βρίσκομαι	βρισκόμουν	I was (situated)

It is conjugated thus:

Singular

αἰσθανόμουν, I was feeling
αἰσθανόσουν, you were feeling
αἰσθανότανε, he was feeling

Plural

αἰσθανόμασταν, we were feeling
αἰσθανόσασταν, you were feeling
αἰσθανόντανε,
or αἰσθανόντουσαν, they were feeling

The Perfect and Past Perfect tenses are formed by putting *ἔχω* and *εἶχα* respectively in front of a form that is identical with the third person singular of the Indefinite, e.g.

Perfect

Past Perfect

Sing.

ἔχω χαθεῖ, I have been lost	εἶχα χαθεῖ, I had been lost
ἔχεις χαθεῖ, you have been lost	εἶχες χαθεῖ, you had been lost
ἔχει χαθεῖ, he has been lost	εἶχε χαθεῖ, he had been lost

Plural

ἔχουμε χαθεῖ, we have been lost	εἶχαμε χαθεῖ, we had been lost
ἔχετε χαθεῖ, you have been lost	εἶχατε χαθεῖ, you had been lost
ἔχουν χαθεῖ, they have been lost	εἶχαν χαθεῖ, they had been lost

II. Passive verbs of class II end in -οῦμαι, -ᾶμαι or -ιέμαι. They are conjugated as follows:

Sing.

συγκινοῦμαι, I am moved	κρατιέμαι, I am held
συγκινεῖσαι, you are moved	κρατιέσαι, you are held
συγκινεῖται, he is moved	κρατιέται, he is held

φοβᾶμαι, I am afraid
φοβάσαι, you are afraid
φοβάται, he is afraid

Plural

συγκινοῦμαστε, we are moved	κρατιόμαστε, we are held
συγκινεῖστε, you are moved	κρατιέστε, you are held
συγκινούνται, they are moved	κρατιούνται, they are held

φοβόμαστε, we are afraid
φοβάστε, you are afraid
φοβοῦνται, they are afraid

The Indefinite is formed by changing the endings -οῦμαι, -ᾶμαι or -ιέμαι into -ηθῶ,

e.g. συγκινηθῶ
κρατηθῶ
φοβηθῶ

It is conjugated in the same way as the Indefinite of verbs of class I. All other tenses are formed and conjugated like those of verbs of class I, e.g.

συγκινήθηκα, I was moved
φοβήθηκα, I became afraid
εἶχα φοβηθεῖ, I had been scared

The Imperative of both class I and II verbs is formed by changing the *-ō* of the Indefinite into *-ov* and removing the accent to the previous syllable. *-thō* may be changed into *-sou*, while *-phō* and *-vthō* may be changed into *-vrou*, e.g.

στάσου, stand up	παντρεύσου, get married
κρατήσου, hold on	σκέψου, think
φάνου, appear	

The Plural Imperative is formed by changing the *-ō* of the Indefinite into *-είτε*, e.g.

φανεείτε, appear
σταθεείτε, stand
σκεφθεείτε, think

Negative command is expressed by *μή* and the Indefinite or the Present according to whether the action is fixed or continuous, e.g.

μή φοβηθεῖς, do not get afraid
μή φοβάσαι, do not be afraid
μή φοβηθεῖτε, don't get frightened

Passive verbs are comparatively rare in Greek. This is because events with a Passive meaning are usually expressed by Active verbs and the accusative of the personal pronoun, e.g.

I was stopped by my father, *Μέ σταμάτησε ὁ πατέρας μου* (lit. = My father stopped me).

When the subject is undefined the verb is in the plural, e.g. He was brought in, *Τόν φέρανε μέσα*.

VOCABULARY

ντρέπομαι, I am ashamed	ἀπέναντι, opposite
θυμάμαι, I remember	περίφημος, famous
φαίνομαι, I seem, appear	δίδομαι, I am given
περήφανος, proud	συγκινημένος, moved, upset
βρίσκομαι, I am (found)	φωτισμένος, lit
τό πάτωμα, floor	τό ζευγάρι, couple
λυπᾶμαι, I am sorry	χορεύω, I dance
σηκώνομαι, I get up	ετοιμάζομαι, I get ready
ἀπτόμα, suddenly	ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, I under-
παραξενούομαι, I am sur-	stand, perceive
prised	κοιμᾶμαι, I (go to) sleep
παντρεύομαι, I get married	σκέφτομαι, I think (about)
φοβάμαι, I fear	χάνομαι, I get lost
στέκομαι, I stand	

EXERCISE 33

Translate:

1. Ντρέπομαι γι' αὐτήν.
2. Μέ θυμάσαι;
3. Φαίνεται περήφανος γι' αὐτό.
4. Τώρα βρίσκόμαστε στό ἔκτο πάτωμα.
5. Βρίσκεται στό γραφεῖο.
6. Σέ λυπᾶμαι.
7. Σηκώθηκε ἀπτόμα.
8. Τό κορίτσι παραξενούτηκε.
9. Ὁ Ἀλέκος παντρεύτηκε τή Βέρα.
10. Γιά πρώτη φορά ὁ Φίλιππος φοβήθηκε.
11. Στάθηκε ἀπέναντί του.
12. Τό περίφημο πάρτυ δόθηκε.
13. Βρέθηκε μόνος.
14. Ἐκεῖνη φαινόταν συγκινημένη.

15. Στεκόταν δίπλα του.
16. Σέ μιὰ φωτισμένη βεράντα φαίνονταν δυό ζευγάρια πού χόρεναν.
17. Έτοιμαζόταν νά φύγει.
18. Δέν τήν είχε αντίληφθει.
19. Θέλει νά τήν παντρευτεί.
20. Δέν μπορούσα νά κοιμηθῶ ὅλη νύχτα.
21. Κοιμήσον.
22. Σκέπον καλά.
23. Μήν ἐτοιμάζεσαι.
24. Στάσον ἐδῶ.

EXERCISE 34

Translate:

1. I do not remember you.
2. I cannot think now.
3. I got very frightened.
4. I am not sorry for you.
5. She got ready very quickly.
6. He stood near me.
7. I cannot sleep these days.
8. Do not get lost.
9. Where is he (found) now?
10. Sleep.

MIXED VERBS

Some verbs such as *έρχομαι*, I come; *κάθομαι*, I sit; *γίνομαι*, I become, have a Passive form in the Present and an Active one in the Indefinite. Their main tenses are as follows:

Present

έρχομαι, I come *κάθομαι*, I sit *γίνομαι*, I become

Indef.

έρθω *καθίσω* or *κάτσω* *γίνω*

Past

ἦρθα, I came *κάθισα*, I sat *ἔγινα*, I became

Imperfect

ἐρχόμουν, I was coming *καθόμουν*, I was sitting *γινόμουν*, I was becoming

Their Indefinite Imperative is

ἔλα, come *κάθισε* or *κάτσε*, sit *γίνου*, become
ἐλάτε *καθίστε* *γενήτε*

A rather unique Passive verb is *εἶμαι*, I am, which is conjugated as follows:

Present and Indefinite

Past and Imperfect

Sing. <i>εἶμαι</i> , I am	<i>ἦμουν</i> or <i>ἤμουν</i> , I was
<i>εἶσαι</i> , you are	<i>ἦσων(α)</i> , you were
<i>εἶναι</i> , he is	<i>ἦταν(ε)</i> he was
<i>εἵμαστε</i> , we are	<i>ἤμασταν</i> , we were
<i>εἴστε</i> , you are	<i>ἦσασταν</i> , you were
<i>εἶναι</i> , they are	<i>ἦταν(ε)</i> they were

EXAMPLES

Ἦρθε στήν Ἑλλάδα μέ κάμποσα λεφτά, He came to Greece with a lot of money

Ἔρχεσαι μαζί μας; Are you coming with us?

Καθίστε παρακαλῶ, Sit down please.

Ἦμουν πέντε χρονῶν, I was five years old.

VOCABULARY

εἶμαι, I am
χωρίς, without
ἢ θέληση, will
κουρασμένος, tired
χαμηλός, low
γίνομαι, I become

τί; what?
ἡ ὁμιλία, talk
ὁ μηχανικός, engineer
κάθομαι, I sit (down)
τό τραπέζι, small table

EXERCISE 35

Translate:

1. Εἶσαι ἓνας ἄνθρωπος χωρίς θέληση.
2. Εἴμαστε πολύ κουρασμένοι.
3. Κάθισαν γύρω ἀπό ἓνα χαμηλό τραπέζι.
4. Θά ἔρθω αὐριο.
5. Καθόταν δίπλα του.
6. Τοῦ εἶπε νά καθίσει.
7. Ἦμουν τότε ἑννέα χρονῶν.
8. Δέν ἤξερε τί γινόταν.
9. Μή καθίσεις ἐκεῖ.
10. Ἐλάτε νά πᾶμε στό θέατρο.
11. Ἡ ὁμιλία σας ἦταν περιφημη.
12. Θά γίνω μηχανικός.
13. Εἶναι δικό μου.
14. Τί θέλετε παρακαλῶ;

THE PRONOUNS 'I', 'YOU', 'HE', ETC.

As has been stated, person is denoted by the ending of verbs. Sometimes, however, especially when emphasis or explicitness is required, the personal pronoun is used. Its forms are:

ἐγώ, I	ἐμεῖς, we
ἐσύ, you	ἐσεῖς, you
αὐτός, he	αὐτοί, they

e.g. Ἐγώ πῆγα στήν Ἀγγλία, I went to England.
Σεῖς δέν ἤρθατε, You did not come.

Another form of the accusative case of the personal pronoun* is ἐμένα, me; ἐμᾶς, us; ἐσένα or σένα, you; ἐσᾶς or σᾶς, you; e.g.

κοντά σ' ἐμένα, near me.

Μιλοῦσε σ' ἐσᾶς, He was talking to you.

The above pronouns usually answer the interrogative adjective ποῖός, who? (gen. ποιανοῦ, whose), e.g.

Ποῖός ἔφαγε τά πορτοκάλια; Who has eaten the oranges?

Ἐγώ, I (did).

Ποιοί εἶναι Ἴταλοι; Who are Italians?

Ἐμεῖς οἱ τρεῖς, We three.

OTHER USES OF ποῖός, ETC.

Ποιανοῦ εἶναι τό αὐτοκίνητο; Whose is the car?
Εἶναι δικό μου, It is mine.

* See page 100.

Σέ ποιούς ἔδωσα χρήματα; To whom have I given money?
Σέ μᾶς, To us.

Note that τί, what? (gen. τίνος), is another common interrogative adjective, e.g.

Τί εἶναι αὐτό; What is this?

Τίνος εἶναι αὐτά τά παπούτσια; Whose are these shoes?

The Greek equivalent of English reflexive pronouns such as "myself", "yourself", etc. is the noun ὁ ἐαυτός followed by the appropriate possessive pronoun, μου, my, σου, your, etc. This phrase usually occurs as the object of verbs, e.g.

Βλέπω τόν ἐαυτό μου, I see myself.

Αὐτή ἡ γυναῖκα βλέπει τόν ἐαυτό της στόν καθρέφτη,
This woman sees herself in the mirror.

VOCABULARY

ποιός, who?

τίνος, whose?

μισῶ, I hate

ὁ ἐαυτός, oneself

ὁ ἑκατομμυριοῦχος, million-
aire

τό ρολοῖ, clock, watch

ἐγώ, I

ἐμεῖς, we

ἐσεῖς, you (pl.)

EXERCISE 36

Translate:

1. Ποιόν θέλετε;
2. Ἐσεῖς, τί νομίζετε;
3. Τίνος εἶναι αὐτό τό καπέλλο;
4. Μισῶ τόν ἐαυτό μου.
5. Θά δώσω τρεῖς δραχμές σέ σένα καί τρεῖς στόν ἀδελφό σου.

6. Ἐμεῖς δέν εἴμαστε ἑκατομμυριοῦχοι.

7. Σέ ποιόν ἔδωσα τό ρολοῖ μου;

8. Ἐμᾶς μή μᾶς ρωτᾷς.

9. Ἐγώ τό εἶπα.

10. Ἐγώ ξέρω τόν ἐαυτό μου.

11. Ποιανοῦ εἶναι αὐτό τό κοντί τά σπέρτα;

SUMMARY OF THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF PRONOUNS*

Nominative

1. ἐγώ, I
2. ἐσύ, you (familiar)
3. αὐτός, he
αὐτή, she
αὐτό, it

1. ἡμεῖς, we
2. ἐσεῖς, you
3. αὐτοί, they
αὐτές, they
αὐτά, they

Genitive

1. μου, my
2. σοῦ, your
3. τοῦ, his
τῆς, her
τοῦ, its

1. μάς, our
2. σᾶς, your
3. τούς, their

Accusative

- | | | |
|-------------|----|-------|
| 1. μέ, me | or | μένα |
| 2. σέ, you | | σένα |
| 3. τόν, him | | αὐτόν |
| τήν, her | | αὐτήν |
| τό, it | | αὐτό |

- | | |
|---------------|--------|
| 1. μάς, us | (ἐ)μάς |
| 2. σᾶς, you | (ἐ)σᾶς |
| 3. τούς, them | αὐτούς |
| τίς, them | αὐτές |
| τά, them | αὐτά |

PART TWO INVARIABLE WORDS

* These pronouns have been dealt with separately in previous chapters (see pp. 39, 42, 97, 100, 115).

ADVERBS

There are only about two hundred invariable words, but, being in very frequent use, they are most important. They are mostly very short words. The best way to classify them is by considering their place and function in the sentence. Thus words that are usually put after verbs in order to modify them are called adverbs, e.g.

Τά παιδιά ἔτρεξαν ἐκεῖ, The children ran there.

Μιλᾶτε σιγά, Speak slowly.

Most words that can replace *ἐκεῖ* or *σιγά* in the above or equivalent sentences are adverbs, e.g.

Τά παιδιά ἔτρεξαν πολύ, The children ran a lot.

Τά παιδιά ἔτρεξαν γρήγορα, The children ran fast.

Μή μιλᾶτε τώρα, Do not speak now.

The commonest adverbs are the following:

<i>ἐδῶ,</i> here	<i>ἄλλοτε,</i> previously
<i>ἐκεῖ,</i> there	<i>κάποτε,</i> sometimes, then
<i>πάνω,</i> up	<i>κίόλας,</i> already
<i>κάτω,</i> down	<i>ποτέ,</i> never
<i>πίσω,</i> behind	<i>πάλιν,</i> again
<i>μπροστά,</i> in front	<i>πρίν,</i> earlier
<i>ἄλλοῦ,</i> somewhere else	<i>τότε,</i> then
<i>τώρα,</i> now	<i>ἴσως,</i> perhaps
<i>ὕστερα,</i> after, later	<i>χθές,</i> yesterday
<i>νωρίς,</i> early	<i>πάντοτε,</i> always
<i>αὔριο,</i> tomorrow	<i>ἄλλιῶς,</i> otherwise
<i>μαζί,</i> together	<i>ἀκόμα,</i> yet
<i>λίγο,</i> a little	<i>ἔτσι,</i> thus
<i>πολύ,</i> a lot	<i>σιγά,</i> slowly

Many adverbs are formed from adjectives by changing the final -ος into -α, e.g.

Adjective	Adverb
ήσυχος, quiet	ήσυχα, quietly
καλός, good	καλά, well
εύκολος, easy	εύκολα, easily
άρκετός, sufficient	άρκετά, sufficiently, rather
γρήγορος, quick	γρήγορα, quickly
αριστερός, left	αριστερά, to the left

Adjectives that are in the comparative or superlative forms can produce adverbs in the same way, e.g.

καλύτερος, better	καλύτερα, better
χειρότερος, worse	χειρότερα, worse
εύκολότατος, most easy	εύκολότατα, most easily

VOCABULARY

περπατώ, I walk	εξετάζω, I examine
συχνά, often	διαπεραστικά, piercingly
ή τηλεόραση, television	λησμονώ, I forget
τό ταξίδι, journey, trip	ίσια, straight on
δεξιά, to the right	αργά, late, slowly
καθαρός, clean, clear	κλαίω, Indef. κλάω, I cry
τά γυαλιά, spectacles	περίεργος, strange, curious

EXAMPLES

Περπάτα σιγά, Walk slowly.
 Παρακολουθείτε συχνά τηλεόραση; Do you watch television often?
 Τό μυαλό του δούλευε ψυχρά, His brain worked coolly.
 Αύριο θά πάμε ταξίδι, Tomorrow we shall go on a journey.

Πηγαίνετε δεξιά, Go right.
 Εύχαριστώ πολύ, Thanks a lot.

EXERCISE 37

Translate:

1. Είχε πάντοτε λεφτά.
2. Πηγαίνετε απέναντι καί ρωτάτε.
3. Άφισε ήσυχα τό ποτήρι του στό τζάκι.
4. Βλέπω καθαρά μ'αυτά τά γυαλιά.
5. Τόν εξέταζε διαπεραστικά.
6. Είναι κιόλας δεκαπέντε χρονών.
7. Τί θές νά κάνουμε, είπε άπότομα.
8. Τήν είχε δλότελα λησμονήσει.
9. Κάνετε γρήγορα.
10. Πήγαμε μαζί άλλ' έκεινος γόρισε πίσω.
11. Νά πάτε ίσια κι' ύστερα δεξιά.
12. 'Ο Γιώργος κοιμάται άργά καί ξυπνά νωρίς τό πρωτό.
13. Μοῦ κουνούσε τό χέρι του, έτσι.

EXERCISE 38

Translate:

1. Come here quickly.
2. Come back now.
3. He has eaten and drunk enough.
4. You had better come tomorrow.
5. He hasn't come.
6. Walk very slowly.
7. Come again.
8. Now you laugh but later you will cry.
9. Tomorrow he will be better.
10. He was looking at her curiously.

Some adverbs that are formed from adjectives end in -ως. This happens mostly when the adjectives end in -ης.*

The following are some of the commonest adverbs formed in this way:

Adjective	Adverb
ἀκριβής, exact	ἀκριβῶς, exactly
εἰλικρινής, sincere	εἰλικρινῶς, sincerely
συνήθης, usual	συνήθως, usually
εὐτυχής, happy	εὐτυχῶς, luckily

Some adjectives ending in -ος form adverbs in both -α and -ως.

τέλειος, perfect	τελείως, completely, or τέλεια, perfectly
ἀπλός, simple	ἀπλῶς or ἀπλά, simply
ἐκτακτός, occasional	ἐκτάκτως or ἐκτακτα, occasionally

Some adjectives end in -υς.† They form adverbs ending in -ιά, e.g.

βαθύς, deep	βαθιά, deeply
μακρύς, long	μακριά, far
πλατύς, wide	πλατιά, widely

* There are very few such adjectives, such as ἀκριβής, exact; εἰλικρινής, sincere. They are declined as follows:

Sing. (M. & F.)	Sing. (N.)
εἰλικρινής	εἰλικρινές
εἰλικρινῇ or εἰλικρινοῦς	εἰλικρινοῦς
εἰλικρινῇ	εἰλικρινές
Plural	Plural
εἰλικρινεῖς	εἰλικρινῇ
εἰλικρινῶν	εἰλικρινῶν
εἰλικρινεῖς	εἰλικρινῇ

† Footnote on opposite page.

VOCABULARY

δῶ = ἐδῶ, here	ὁ συγγραφέας, writer
ἡ Νέα Ὑόρκη, New York	τό ποτάμι, river
συνεπής, consistent	διαρκῶς, continuously
συνεπῶς, consequently	τί; what?

EXAMPLES

Εἶναι ἡ ὥρα δώδεκα ἀκριβῶς, It is twelve o'clock exactly.
 Εὐτυχῶς τό δωμάτιο εἶναι ζεστό, Luckily the room is warm.
 Ἐκλείσε τελείως τά μάτια του, He closed his eyes completely.

EXERCISE 39

Translate:

1. Πήγαινε ἐκεῖ συνήθως τά ἀπογεύματα.
2. Ἡ Νέα Ὑόρκη εἶναι πολύ μακριά ἀπό δῶ.

† They are declined as follows:

	M	F	N
Sing.	ὁ βαθύς	ἡ βαθειά	τό βαθύ
	τοῦ βαθιοῦ	τῆς βαθειᾶς	τοῦ βαθιοῦ
	τό βαθύ	τή βαθειά	τό βαθύ
Plural	οἱ βαθιοί	οἱ βαθειές	τά βαθιά
	τῶν βαθιῶν	τῶν βαθειῶν	τῶν βαθιῶν
	τούς βαθιούς	τίς βαθειές	τά βαθιά

A quite individual adjectival ending in -υς is πολύς, much, which has already been used in some of its forms and which is declined as follows:

	M	F	N
Sing.	ὁ πολύς	ἡ πολλή	τό πολύ
	τοῦ πολλοῦ	τῆς πολλῆς	τοῦ πολλοῦ
	τόν πολύ	τήν πολλή	τό πολύ
Plural	οἱ πολλοί	οἱ πολλές	τά πολλά
	τῶν πολλῶν	τῶν πολλῶν	τῶν πολλῶν
	τούς πολλούς	τίς πολλές	τά πολλά

3. Σᾶς μιᾷ εἰλικρινῶς.
4. Δυστυχῶς δὲν ἔχω λεφτά μαζί μου.
5. Θά ἔρθω στίς τρεῖς ἀκριβῶς.
6. Δέ μᾶς γράφατε' συνεπῶς δὲν ἤρθαμε.
7. Ὁ Χάρης εἶναι πολὺ συνεπής καὶ εἰλικρινής ἀλλὰ δὲν εἶναι ἀκριβής στήν ὥρα του.
8. Ὁ Σαῖξπηρ εἶναι ἕνας βαθύς συγγραφέας.
9. Αὐτό τό ποτάμι εἶναι πολὺ βαθύ.
10. Νά φύγετε. Ἀλλιῶς θά σᾶς διώξουμε.
11. Μιλοῦσε διαρκῶς ἀλλὰ δὲν καταλάβαινα τί ἔλεγε.
12. Θέλω ἀπλῶς νά μέ ἀφίσετε ἥσυχο.
13. Συνήθως δὲν πάω στό συνεμά, ἀλλὰ χθές πῆγα ἐκτάκτως.

PARTICIPLES

Some adverbs are formed from verbs by changing the final -ω of Active verbs into -οντας for verbs of class I, and -ώντας for verbs of class II, e.g.

κλαίω, I cry
γελῶ, I laugh

κλαίοντας, crying
γελώντας, laughing

EXAMPLES

Τά παιδιά ἔτρεχαν κλαίοντας, The children were running, crying.

Τά παιδιά ἔτρεχαν γελώντας, The children were running, laughing.

These adverbs are said to be the Participles of Active verbs and they may partly behave like verbs in that they can take their own objects, e.g.

Ἐφυγε κουνώντας τὰ χέρια του, He went away waving his hands.

Active Participles are rarer in Greek than in English because the Greek Present and Imperfect tenses express both instantaneous and continuous events, e.g.

Τώρα τρώγω, Now I am eating.
Τραγουδοῦσε, He was singing.

Active Participles are used to modify verbs which are mostly in the Imperfect and Past tenses.

VOCABULARY

τινάζω, I push away
 ἡ καρέκλα, chair
 τό θέμα, subject
 ἀπαντῶ, I answer
 τό βλέμμα, look
 ἀθόρυβα, noiselessly
 τονίζω, I stress
 ξαπλώνω, I lie down
 λίγο, while
 ἀνατολικά, eastwards

εὐθυμος, gay
 ἀλλάζω, change
 ἡ σημασία, meaning, sense
 ἀποφεύγω, I avoid
 πλησιάζω, I approach
 ἡ πρόταση, sentence
 φτάνω, I arrive, reach
 τό ταβάνι, ceiling
 ὁ διευθυντής, director
 χωρίς, without

EXERCISE 40

Translate:

1. Σηκώθηκε ἀπότομα τινάζοντας τήν καρέκλα πίσω του.
2. Σᾶς εὐχαριστῶ, εἶπε χαμογελώντας.
3. Πήγαινε τραγουδώντας.
4. Ἄλλοι πίνοντας γίνονται εὐθυμοί.
5. Μιλοῦσε ἀλλάζοντας θέματα χωρίς σημασία.
6. Ὁχι, ἀπάντησε αὐτός, ἀποφεύγοντας τό βλέμμα της.
7. Εἶχε πλησιάσει ἀθόρυβα καί τούς παρακολοῦθοῦσε χαμογελώντας.
8. Ἐπανάλαβε τήν πρόταση τονίζοντας κάθε λέξη.
9. Περιπατοῦσε κοιτάζοντας πίσω του.
10. Μιλοῦσε διαρκῶς κουνώντας τό χέρι της.

EXERCISE 41

Translate:

1. I shall go running.
2. He came singing in a loud voice.

3. He arrived without being able to say a word.
4. He lay down looking at the ceiling.
5. They sat for a while, talking to the director.
6. They left, going eastwards.

PASSIVE PARTICIPLES

The Participle of Passive verbs is formed by changing the final -θῶ or -τῶ of the Indefinite into -μένος, e.g.

Present	Indefinite	Participle	
χάνομαι	χαθῶ	χαμένος	lost
ἀπλώνομαι	ἀπλωθῶ	ἀπλωμένος	spread
κουράζομαι	κουραστῶ	κουρασμένος	tired

If there is χ or φ in front of -θω or -τω they are changed into γ and μ respectively, e.g.

Present	Indefinite	Participle	
ἀλλάζομαι	ἀλλαχθῶ	ἀλλαγμένος	changed
κρύβομαι	κρυφθῶ	κρυμμένος	hidden

Passive Participles are adjectives both in the way they are declined and in the way they behave in sentences. Thus, there are three classes of Participles declined like adjectives ending in -ος.

M	F	N
ὁ κουρασμένος, tired	ἡ κουρασμένη	τό κουρασμένο
ὁ κρατημένος, reserved	ἡ κρατημένη	τό κρατημένο

Some frequent but irregular Passive Participles are χαρούμενος, happy, from χαίρομαι, I am happy, glad; κοιμισμένος, asleep, from κοιμᾶμαι, I am sleeping; πεθαμένος, dead, from πεθαίνω, I die.

Some Passive Participles are based on verbs which are more common in the Active form, e.g. τρομαγμένος, scared, from τρομάζω, I get scared; μεθυσμένος, drunk,

PASSIVE PARTICIPLES

from μεθῶ, I get drunk; θυμωμένος, angry, from θυμώνω, I get angry.

Some adjectives end in -μένος on the analogy of Passive Participles, e.g.

εὐτυχισμένος, happy
δυστυχισμένος, unhappy

Adverbs can be formed from Passive Participles in the usual manner, e.g.

χαρούμενα, gladly
μεθυσμένα, drunkenly

VOCABULARY

ντόνομαι, I get dressed	ἡ κομψότητα, smartness
καρφώνω, I fix	τό χαμόγελο, smile
συζητῶ, I discuss, argue	ἡ ιδιοτροπία, caprice,
χαϊδεμένος, pampered,	whim
spoil	προσκαλῶ, I invite
ὁ λόγος, reason	χαμένος, lost
ὁ παράδεισος, paradise	βυθίζω, I immerse

EXERCISE 42

Translate:

- Ἦταν μεθυσμένος καὶ δὲν ᾔξερε τί ἔλεγε.
- Σήμερα εἶμαι πολύ χαρούμενη.
- Ἡ Ἑλένη φαινόταν συγκινημένη.
- Ἦταν ντυμένος μέ πολλή κομψότητα.
- Ἐίχε διαρκῶς τὰ μάτια της καρφωμένα ἐπάνω του.
- Ἡ κυρία Μπράουν κούνησε τό κεφάλι της μ' ἓνα εὐτυχισμένο χαμόγελο.
- Σέ μιὰ φωτισμένη βεράντα κάθονταν τρεῖς ἄντρες καὶ συζητοῦσαν.
- Ὅλα αὐτά εἶναι ιδιοτροπίες χαϊδεμένου παιδιοῦ.

EXERCISE 43

Translate:

1. Why are you so sad?
2. He was scared.
3. We are invited to Mrs. Petrides' party.
4. I worked a lot and I am tired.
5. I do not know the reason, but I am very unhappy.
6. Milton wrote *Paradise Lost*.
7. He was immersed (*βυθισμένος*) in his thoughts.
8. I am angry with you.

ADVERBIALS

Adverbials form another class of invariable words. They are adverbs used to qualify mainly adjectives or other adverbs and they are normally put in front of the words they qualify like *πολύ* in these sentences:

Τό κρασί ήταν πολύ καλό, The wine was very good.

Πήγαν πολύ μακριά, They went very far.

The following words are adverbials as they can replace *πολύ* in the above or equivalent sentences:

<i>ἀρκετά</i> , fairly	<i>τόσο</i> , so
<i>μᾶλλον</i> , rather	<i>ἔτσι</i> , so
<i>πάρα πολύ</i> , very much	<i>τρομερά</i> , awfully
<i>πιά</i> , more	<i>σχεδόν</i> , almost
<i>λίγο</i> , rather	<i>ἐντελῶς</i> , completely
<i>περισσότερο</i> , more	<i>ὄχι</i> , not
<i>λιγότερο</i> , less	<i>ὅσο</i> , as . . . as
<i>ἀκόμα</i> , even	

The above words can also precede nouns which are used in an adjectival manner, e.g.

Ὁ Κώστας εἶναι πολύ κύριος, Costas is very much a gentleman.

There is one adverbial which usually precedes nouns. This is *σά* (*σάν* in front of vowels or *κ, π, τ, ξ, ψ*), like, e.g.

Περπατοῦσε σάν ἀξιωματικός, He was walking like an officer.

VOCABULARY

ἡ θέσις, seat	τό φαί, food, meal
ἡ περιουσία, property	ἀδύνατος, weak
ὁ καφές, coffee	γλυκός, sweet
ἡ χάρη, favour	ὁ γυιός, son
ἐξυπνος, intelligent	ἄγνωστος, unknown
ἄστεϊος, funny	εὐγενής, polite

EXERCISE 44

Translate:

1. Αὐτή ἡ θέσις εἶναι πολὺ μπροστά.
2. Μοῦ εἶναι σχεδόν ἀδύνατο νά τό πιστέψω.
3. Ὁ πατέρας του ἔχει μίαν ἀρκετά μεγάλη περιουσία.
4. Θέλω ἓνα καφέ, μᾶλλον γλυκό.
5. Εἶναι τόσο δύσκολο νά μοῦ κάνεις αὐτή τή χάρη;
6. Ὁ γυιός σας εἶναι τρομερά ἐξυπνος.
7. Αὐτός ὁ ἄνθρωπος μοῦ εἶναι ἐντελῶς ἄγνωστος.
8. Εἶναι πάρα πολὺ ἄστεϊο.
9. Εἴστε πολὺ εὐγενής.
10. Αὐτό τό κρασί εἶναι ἀκόμα καλύτερο.
11. Θέλετε νερό; Ναι, ἀλλά ὄχι πολὺ.
12. Αὐτό τό φαί εἶναι πιό καλό ἀπό ἐκεῖνο.
13. Δέ βλέπω πολὺ μακριά.
14. Εὔπηρσα πολὺ ἀργά καί πῆγα στή δουλειά στίς δέκα ἡ ὥρα.

INTERROGATIVE ADVERBS

There is a class of interrogative words which have certain characteristics of adverbs. They are called interrogative adverbs and are put in front of verbs as questions, such as

Πότε ἦρθε ὁ Ἀντώνης; When did Anthony come?

Ποῦ εἶναι τὰ σπέρτα; Where are the matches?

The following words belong to this class:

πότε; when? μήπως; equivalent to "I wonder if"
 ποῦ; where? ἄραγε; equivalent to "I wonder if"
 πῶς; how? ὥστε; so?
 γιατί; why?

Μήπως and ἄραγε are usually associated with future events, e.g.

Μήπως θά εἶναι καί ὁ Γιάννης ἐκεῖ; Will John be there too, I wonder?

*Ἀραγε θά ἔρθει; Now will he come?

Similar to the above are the interrogative adjectives ποῖός; who, gen. ποιανοῦ, whose; τί, what, gen. τίνος, whose; πόσος, how much, e.g.

Ποῖός ἦρθε; Who came?

Ποιανοῦ εἶναι τό σπίτι; Whose is the house?

Τί εἶναι αὐτό; What is this?

Τίνος εἶναι αὐτό; Whose is this?

Πόσο κάνουν οἱ πατάτες σήμερα; How much are potatoes today?

VOCABULARY

ἐμποδίζω, I stop, prevent	άσχημος, bad, ugly
τίποτε, anything	τό πράγμα, thing
σκέφτομαι, I think	φεύγω, I leave, go away
τό ποδήλατο, bicycle	

EXERCISE 45

Translate:

1. Ποῦ θές νά πᾶς; τοῦ εἶπε ἀπότομα.
2. Ποιός θά μ' ἐμποδίσει;
3. Πόσων χρονῶν εἶσαι;
4. Μήπως μοῦ ἦρθες μεθυσμένος;
5. Ποιά εἶναι ἡ οἰκογένειά σου;
6. Τί σκέφτεσαι νά κάνεις;
7. Γιατί ρωτᾷς;
8. Πῶς εἶναι ὁ πατέρας σου; Πολύ καλά, εὐχαριστῶ.
9. Ἄραγε, θά μέ θυμηθεῖ;
10. Πῶς εἴστε; Ὁχι καί άσχημα.
11. Ποιανοῦ εἶναι αὐτό τό ποδήλατο;

EXERCISE 46

Translate:

1. Why are you leaving so early?
2. What do you want to say?
3. Why not?
4. I wonder if (μήπως) you are hiding anything from me?
5. What could he do on his own?
6. What time is it, please?
7. So, you are leaving?
8. Do you think then, that I can wait for you for two hours?
9. Why are you telling me these (things)?

CONJUNCTIONS

Invariable words called conjunctions are used to connect two verbs belonging to two different phrases, as *δταν* and *δτι* in the following sentences:

Φύγαμε δταν τελείωσε τό ἔργο, We left when the play ended.

Εἶπε δτι τελείωσε τό ἔργο, He said that the play had ended.

The following words, which can replace *δταν* or *δτι* in the above or equivalent sentences, are termed conjunctions:

ἀφοῦ, after

σάν, as

καί, and

ἐνῶ, while

δμως, however

μετά, after

ἀνκαι, although

μόλις, as soon as

μολονότι, although

ἀλλά, but

ὡσπου, until

ἴσως, in the hope that, in case

γιατί, because

πώς, πού, that

ἐπειδή, because

καθώς, as

μήπως, lest

δποτε, whenever

δπως, as

ἄλλωστε, besides

δτι, that

τί, what

νά, that

άν, if

πρίν or προτοῦ, before

δπου, where

Most of the above conjunctions can precede verbs in almost any tense, e.g.

Τρῶμε *δταν* πεινάμε, We eat when we are hungry.

Φάγαμε *δταν* πεινάσαμε, We ate when we got hungry.

Θά φᾶμε *δταν* πεινάσουμε, We shall eat when we get hungry.

Some, however, are normally associated with particular tenses of the verb.

One of these conjunctions is *πρὶν*, before, which usually precedes the Indefinite, e.g.

Φύγαμε *πρὶν* τελειώσει τό *ἔργο*, We left before the play had ended.

The conjunction *ὅποτε* can precede the Present or the Imperfect, e.g.

Φεύγαμε *ὅποτε* δέ μᾶς εὐχαριστοῦσε τό *ἔργο*, We used to leave whenever the play did not please us.

EXAMPLES

Νομίζω πώς δέν ἔχετε δίκαιο, I think that you are not right.

Τόν ἐκτιμῶ πολύ ἄνκαι δέν τόν γνωρίζω, I respect him very much although I do not know him.

Φοβόταν μήπως τόν χάσει, He was afraid he might lose him. Κάνε ὅπως θές, Do as you like.

Ἐκεῖνος πῆγε κοντά του καί τόν χαιρέτησε, He went near him and greeted him.

Δέν ἔξερε τί νά πει, He didn't know what to say.

VOCABULARY

τελειώνω, finish, end
ὁ καλλιτέχνης artist
ἡ ἀξία, worth, value
θαρρῶ, I think
καθυστερῶ, I am late

ἡ περιπέτεια, adventure
τό τραῖνο, train
ξαναβλέπω, I see again
προσέχω, I notice
μετανιώνω, I change my mind, repent

εἶναι ἀνάγκη, it is necessary	ἀρκετά, a fair amount,
τό ἔργο, work (dramatic),	enough
play	μαθαίνω, I learn
ιδιαιτέρος, special	ξεκινῶ, I start
στενοχωρημένος, worried	γερός, healthy and strong
τά καθέκαστα, events, details	κάτι, something
	παράξενος, strange, unusual

EXERCISE 47

Translate:

1. Φύγαμε *δταν* τελείωσε τό *ἔργο*.
2. Μιλοῦσε γιατί ἤθελε νά ξεχάσει.
3. Τόν θύμωσε γιατί τοῦ μίλησε ἀπότομα.
4. Τώρα ἔβλεπε πώς οἱ καλλιτέχνες εἶχαν μίαν ἰδιαίτερη ἀξία στή ζωή.
5. Βγήκαν ἀπό τό δωμάτιο ἀφοῦ ἔσβυσαν τό φῶς.
6. Γελοῦσε ἐνῶ μέσα του ἦταν πολύ στενοχωρημένος.
7. Αὔριο *δταν* θά εἶσαι καλά, μ'εὐχαριστεῖς.
8. Μή θαρρεῖς πώς ντρέπομαι γι'αὐτό.
9. Εἶπε *δτι* θά ἐρχότανε στίς ὀκτώ.
10. Ὁ ἀξιωματικός δέν ἦταν ἐκεῖ ἀλλά ἔξερε ὅλα τά καθέκαστα.
11. Δέν νομίζεις πώς καθυστερήσαμε ἀρκετά;
12. Εἶχα τίς περιπέτειές μου. Νομίζω νά τίς ἔμαθες.
13. Περιμένω ἴσως ἔρθει.
14. Ἐμείνα ἐκεῖ ὥσπου ξεκίνησε τό τραῖνο.
15. Ἦταν εὐτυχησμένοι πού τόν ξαναεἶδαν γερό.

EXERCISE 48

Translate:

1. He noticed that the lights were off in the house.
2. For a moment he seemed as if he wanted to say something but he changed his mind.

3. He left him after he had turned and looked at him angrily.
4. I cannot speak well but I want to say this.
5. He goes away whenever you come.
6. He used to tell us not to smoke, but he smoked a lot.
7. I stayed there until they came.
8. As I was walking in the street I saw something unusual.
9. He was afraid lest his father should leave him.
10. Do as you like.
11. Come, although it is not very necessary.
12. Go wherever you like.
13. He came as soon as he heard it.

THE USE OF *αν*

The conjunction *αν* is usually put at the beginning of a sentence to express a conditional event. When the condition refers to a future event the *αν* is followed by the Indefinite while the verb of the second sentence is formed by *θα* and the Indefinite or by the Imperative, e.g.

αν θέλεις νά πας, πήγαινε, If you want to go, go.

αν πᾶς στο σινεμά θα δεις ένα καλό φιλμ, If you go to the cinema you will see a good film.

When the condition refers to an event in the past the *αν* is followed by the Imperfect while the verb of the second sentence is formed by *θα* and the Imperfect, e.g.

αν πήγαινες στο σινεμά χθές, θα έβλεπες ένα καλό φιλμ,
If you had gone to the cinema you would have seen
a good film; or if you went . . . you would see . . .

αν μέ ρωτούσαν θα έλεγα ότι δεν ήταν σωστό, If I were asked I would have said (or I would say) that it was not right.

FURTHER CONJUNCTIONS

Some of the above conjunctions connect a noun and a sentence that refers to it. Such conjunctions are *πού*, that, who, whom, and *όπου*, where, e.g.

Τό βιβλίο πού διάβασα σήμερα ήταν θαυμάσιο, The book that I read today was wonderful.

Πού may be replaced by the adjective *ό οποίος*, e.g.

Τό βιβλίο τό οποίο διάβασα σήμερα ήταν θαυμάσιο, The book that I read today was wonderful.

Τό εστιατόριο όπου φάγαμε τό μεσημέρι ήταν απαίσιο, The restaurant where we ate at noon was horrible.

Another conjunction is *ό,τι*, what, which implies both a noun and *πού* and which is used in sentences such as *Είχε ό,τι ήθελε*, He had what he wanted.

VOCABULARY

ή κατοχή, occupation
χρωστῶ, I owe
τό νοίκι, rent
τό πρωινό, morning
ό πλούτος, wealth
συχνάζω, frequent
ξαναδίνω, give back
απόψε, tonight
βοηθῶ, I help

μένω, I stay
απολαμβάνω, I enjoy
στεροῦμαι, I am deprived of
απροσδόκητα, unexpectedly
συνήθως, usually
ανήκω, I belong
ή μουσική, music
τό καφενεῖο, café

EXERCISE 49

Translate:

1. *Είμαι ό Άγγλος πού ήταν ἐδῶ τόν καιρό τῆς κατοχῆς.*
2. *Ήρθε στήν Ελλάδα μέ κάμποσα λεφτά πού είχε κάνει στήν Ἀμερική.*
3. *Αὐτή τήν ὥρα πού μιλοῦμε χρωστᾶς τό νοίκι σου.*
4. *Ήταν κάτι πού δέν τό περίμενε.*
5. *Ἄν ἔμενε σιωπηλός δέν ήταν γιατί δέν είχε τίποτε νά πει.*
6. *Ἀπέναντι φαίνονταν δύο ζευγάρια πού χόρευαν.*
7. *Εἶδα τό Βάσο πού ἀπολάμβανε τό πρωινό στή βεράντα.*
8. *Δέν ήθελε νά στερηθεῖ τόν πλοῦτο πού τόσο ἀπροσδόκητα τοῦ είχε πέσει.*
9. *Κάνε ό,τι θέλεις.*
10. *Πῆγε νά τόν βρεῖ στοῦ Γιάννη όπου σύχναζε συνήθως τό πρωινά.*
11. *Εἶμαι ἕνας ἄνθρωπος πού θέλει νά σοῦ ξαναδόσει τήν εὐτυχία πού ἔχασες, τόν πλοῦτο πού σοῦ ἀνήκει, τήν οἰκογένεια πού δέ χάρηκες.*

EXERCISE 50

Translate:

1. If you want to come, come tonight.
2. This is the book (that) I gave (to) you.
3. (At) the moment (when) they sat down, the music started (playing).
4. He is the man who helped us at a difficult moment.
5. He went to the café where his friends used to go.
6. We saw two women who were arguing.

CONNECTIVES

Connectives form another class of invariable words. They are conjunctions used to join together two nouns, or pronouns, or adjectives or verbs or adverbs, e.g.

Τά αυτοκίνητα καί τά αεροπλάνα είναι χρήσιμα καί εὐχάριστα, Cars and airplanes are useful and pleasant.
Χτές καί σήμερα χορέψαμε καί τραγουδήσαμε, Yesterday and today we danced and sang.

Other connectives are: *ἢ*, or; *γιά*, or; *ἀλλά*, but.

Some connectives are repeated in front of both words that they connect, e.g.

Οὔτε ἐγώ οὔτε αὐτός θά πάει, Neither I nor he will go.

Other such connectives are: *εἴτε . . . εἴτε*, either . . . or; *ἢ . . . ἢ*, either . . . or; *ὅχι . . . ἀλλά*, not . . . but, e.g.

Εἴτε αὐτό εἴτε ἐκεῖνο, Either this one or that one.

**Ὅχι αὐτό ἀλλά ἐκεῖνο*. Not this one but that one.

VERBAL PARTICLES

Verbal Particles are words which precede verbs to denote time or mood or negation, etc. Such words are:

θά, νά, δέν, μή, ἄς, γιά νά.

These particles cannot be translated as they do not normally stand by themselves. Their meaning becomes apparent in their usage.

Θά, νά and *δέν* have been examined in previous chapters (see pp. 67, 88). There are, however, more uses of *θά* and *νά*, as in the following examples:

Θά πῆγε στό θέατρο, He must have gone to the theatre.

Θά εἶχε περάσει τά σαράντα, He most probably was over forty.

Thus it can be seen that *θά* with the Past or the Past Perfect denotes a very probable assumption. On the other hand *θά* with the Imperfect is equivalent to English verbs preceded by *would*, e.g.

Θά πῆγαινα, I would have gone, I would go.

Θά ἤθελα ἓνα ποτήρι νερό, I would like a glass of water.

The particle *νά* followed by the Present or the Indefinite may be used in questions, and is equivalent to English *shall*, e.g.

Νά κλείσω τήν πόρτα; Shall I close the door?

When *νά* is followed by the Imperfect in questions it is equivalent to English *should*, e.g.

Νά πήγαινε ἢ νά μή πῆγαινε; Should he go or should he not go?

Νά ἔλεγε πῶς τό θυμόταν; Should he say that he remembered it?

When it is not a matter of interrogation the Greek equivalent of *should* is ἔπρεπε νά, e.g.

*Ἐπρεπε νά πᾶς, You should go.

*Ἐπρεπε νά πῆγαινες, You should have gone.

Νά is also used in such expressions.

Νά ζεῖ κανεῖς (= one), ἢ νά μή ζεῖ, to be or not to be.

Νά is also used after σά to express the equivalent of *as if*, e.g.

Μιλᾶς σά νά μή θέλεις νά πᾶς, You speak as if you do not want to go.

When preceded by μακάρι, νά* expresses the equivalent of *I wish*, etc., e.g.

Μακάρι νά μποροῦσα νά ἔρθω, I wish I could come.

*Ας may be used with the first or third person of the Present or the Indefinite to express either continuous or non-continuous decision or desire. It is, therefore, equivalent to the Imperative for those persons, e.g.

ἄς γράφει, let him write

ἄς σηκωθῶ, let me get up

ἄς πᾶνε, let them go

Μή can be considered as the negative form of ἄς. It is used with the second person, e.g.

Μή τραγουδᾶτε, do not sing

Μή φύγεις, do not go

* A rare use of νά is in this sentence:

*Η ἀπάντηση δέ φάνηκε νά ἔπεισε τή μητέρα του, The answer did not seem to have convinced his mother, where it is used as a conjunction.

It may, however, also be used with the first or third person when it is preceded by ἄς, e.g.

ἄς μή μιλήσω, I had better not speak

ἄς μή ἔρθουν, let them not come

Γιά νά is used as a substitute of νά to express the English equivalent of *in order to*, e.g.

*Ἐμεινε στό σπίτι γιά νά διαβάσει, He stayed at home in order to read.

VOCABULARY

ὑποχρεωμένος, forced,
obliged

σπουδαῖος, important

ὅπωςδήποτε, in any case

ὁ βασιλιάς, king

πίνω, I drink

τά βάσανα, troubles

εἶμαι ὑποχρεωμένος, I have
to

τό τηλεφώνημα, phone-call

ἡ εὐγένεια, politeness

ξεχνῶ (Indef. ξεχάσω),

I forget

νικῶ, I win, beat

EXERCISE 51

Translate:

1. Δέ θέλω οὔτε νά σέ δῶ οὔτε νά μέ δεῖς.
2. Νά πᾶς εἴτε ἐσύ εἴτε ὁ ἀδερφός σου.
3. Εἶμαι ὑποχρεωμένος νά μείνω στό σπίτι ὅχι μόνο γιατί θέλω νά δουλέψω ἀλλά καί γιατί περιμένω ἕνα σπουδαῖο τηλεφώνημα.
4. Ὅπωςδήποτε θά ξεκίνησαν στίς τρεῖς.
5. Θά ξεκινούσαμε στίς τρεῖς ἀν ἐρχόσασταν στήν ὥρα σας.
6. Θά ἦθελα πολύ νά δῶ τό Βασιλιά Λήρ ἀπόψε.
7. Νά μείνω ἢ νά φύγω;
8. Ἐπρεπε νά μοῦ ἔγραφες μόλις πῆρες τό γράμμα μου.

9. Ἐπρεπε νά ἔρθεις ἀμέσως.
10. Μοῦ μιλοῦσε μέ πολλή εὐγένεια, σά νά μή μέ ἤξερε.
11. Ἄς τραγουδήσουμε ὅλοι μαζί.
12. Ἐπινε γιά νά ξεχάσει τά βάσανά του.
13. Μακάρι νά νικήσετε.
14. Δέ μοῦ ἀρέσει νά σηκώνομαι πολύ νωρίς.

PREPOSITIONS

We have already used a number of prepositions. They can be defined as invariable words that precede nouns or pronouns which are in the accusative case. Thus, all words that can replace σ' or γιά in the following or equivalent sentences are prepositions:

Πῆγε σ' τήν Κρήτη, He went to Crete.
 Αὐτό εἶναι γιά σένα, This is for you.

Besides σ' (which is also found as σέ) and γιά the most common prepositions are:

μέ, with	σά, like
ἀπό, from, by	πρός, towards
ὥς, till, up to	πρὶν, before
μετά, after	παρά, in spite of, against, etc.
χωρίς, without	

A number of adverbs can precede the prepositions σέ, μέ and ἀπό to form complex prepositions such as:

πάνω σέ, on, upon	ἐμπρός ἀπό, in front of
κοντά σέ, near	κάτω ἀπό, beneath, below
μέσα σέ, in, into	πίσω ἀπό, behind
δίπλα σέ, beside	γύρω ἀπό, round
πλάϊ σέ, beside	ἔξω ἀπό, outside
γύρω σέ, round	πρὶν ἀπό, before
μαζί μέ, together, with	ὕστερα ἀπό, after
πάνω ἀπό, over, above	

VOCABULARY

ἡ ἀπόφαση, decision	ἡ φωτογραφία, photograph
ἡ πετσέτα, towel, napkin	ξαπλώνομαι, I stretch myself out
ἡ προσοχή, attention	φυσῶ, I blow
ἡ πολυθρόνα, armchair	ἡ βιβλιοθήκη, library
ὁ ἀέρας, air, wind	τό μπράτσο, arm
ἡ τσάντα, brief-case, hand-bag	μοιάζω, I resemble
περιποιούμαι, I look after	τό ἀστέρι, star
καταπληκτικά, strikingly	κατοικῶ, I live, inhabit
τό κέντρο, centre	ἡ πέννα, pen, penny
τό διαμέρισμα, flat	τό μήλο, apple
τό καλάθι, basket	τό βλέμμα, look, glance
περισσότερος, more	τό πεζοδρόμιο, pavement
ἡ φωτιά, fire	ἀεροπορικῶς, by air
σιδηροδρομικῶς, by train	ἡ γυναίκα, woman, wife
φροντίζω, I take care of	

EXERCISE 52

Translate:

1. Ἐφθασε ἡ ὥρα γιὰ τὴ μεγάλη ἀπόφαση.
2. Ἡ γυναίκα μου φροντίζει γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πράγματα τοῦ σπιτιοῦ.
3. Μὲ τὴν πετσέτα στὸ χέρι πῆγε στὸ παράθυρο.
4. Πῆρε τὴ φωτογραφία ἀπὸ τὰ χέρια τοῦ Κώστα, τὴν κοίταξε μὲ προσοχή καὶ τοῦ τὴν ἔδωσε πίσω γελῶντας.
5. Ξαπλώθηκε στὴν πολυθρόνα ὅπου πρὶν ἀπὸ λίγο καθόταν ὁ ἀγνωστος κύριος.
6. Ἀπὸ τὴ θάλασσα φυσοῦσε κρύος ἀέρας.
7. Θὰ εἶμαι στὴ βιβλιοθήκη ἀπὸ τίς δέκα τὸ πρωτὶ ὡς τίς πέντε τὸ ἀπόγευμα.
8. Νά ἔρθετε νά με πάρετε μετὰ τίς πέντε.

PREPOSITIONS

9. Ἐσφίξε τὴν τσάντα κάτω ἀπὸ τὸ μπράτσο του.
10. Ἐξῶ ἀπὸ τὴν πόρτα περίμενε ἓνα ταξί.
11. Μὲ περιποιότανε σὰ μητέρα.
12. Τοῦ εἶπα καλὰ λόγια γιὰ σένα.
13. Αὐτὸς ὁ ἄνθρωπος μοιάζει καταπληκτικά μὲ τὸν πατέρα μου.
14. Τὸν εἶδα ὕστερα ἀπὸ τρία χρόνια.

EXERCISE 53

Translate:

1. I shouldn't be able to do anything without your help.
2. He arrived at his house very late.
3. He looks like a film star.
4. He advanced towards the middle of the room.
5. My house is near the centre of the city.
6. I live in a flat with two friends of mine.
7. Your pen is on top of the wireless set.
8. The apples are inside the basket.
9. From 5 till 7 I shall be at home.
10. Her look said much more than her words.
11. The car stopped beside the pavement.
12. They all sat round the fire.
13. They started off for Piraeus.
14. He went to England by plane.
15. I shall go to Germany by air or by rail.

DETERMINERS

There is one class which contains both variable and invariable words. They are the articles and those words which, in order to determine nouns, can replace the articles *ὁ* or *οἱ* in the following or equivalent sentences:

Ὁ ἄνθρωπος εἶναι τίμος, The man is honest.

Οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι τίμοι, The men are honest.

Determiners include articles, numerals and words like *some, most, a little, many, etc., e.g.*

<i>Αὐτός ὁ,</i> this	<i>ἐκεῖνος,</i> that
<i>Ἔνας, μιά, ἓνα, one, a</i>	<i>ὅλος,</i> all
<i>κανένας, καμμιιά, κανένα,</i>	<i>κάποιος, someone</i>
no one, one	<i>τρεις, three</i>
<i>λίγος, a little</i>	<i>τέσσερεις, four</i>
<i>πολύς, much</i>	<i>διακόσιοι,* two hundred</i>
<i>μερικοί, some</i>	<i>τριακόσιοι, three hundred</i>
<i>οἱ περισσότεροι, most</i>	<i>χίλιοι, one thousand, etc.</i>

The invariable words of this class are:

κάθε, every

κάτι, something, some

Numerals can be either invariable or variable, e.g.

Invariable:	<i>πέντε,</i>	5
	<i>τριάντα ὀκτώ,</i>	38
	<i>ἐκατό</i>	100
Variable:	<i>ἓνα,</i>	1
	<i>διακόσια,</i>	200

* Note that *διακόσιοι, διακόσιες, διακόσια, etc.* are adjectivals.

DETERMINERS

Variable:	<i>τριακόσια,</i>	300
	<i>τετρακόσια,</i>	400
	<i>πεντακόσια,</i>	500
	<i>ἑξακόσια,</i>	600
	<i>ἑπτακόσια,</i>	700
	<i>ὀκτακόσια,</i>	800
	<i>ἐννιακόσια,</i>	900
	<i>χίλια,</i>	1,000

Numerals may also be partly variable, e.g.

τετρακόσια πενήντα ἑξί, 456

ἓνα ἑκατομμύριο, 1,000,000

ἓνα ἑκατομμύριο πεντακόσιες χιλιάδες ὀκτακόσια τριάντα τέσσερα, 1,500,834

VOCABULARY

<i>ἀνήσυχος, restless</i>	<i>ὁ κόσμος, world, people</i>
<i>ὁ Σπαρτιάτης, Spartan</i>	<i>πολεμῶ, I fight</i>
<i>οἱ Θερμοπύλεις, Thermo-</i>	<i>γυρεύω, I look for</i>
<i>pylae</i>	<i>τά χαρτιά, cards</i>
<i>ὁ βλάκας, stupid man, fool</i>	<i>ἀπίθανος, improbable</i>
<i>ὁ καιρός, time, weather</i>	<i>ἡ πέννα, penny</i>
<i>τό σελίνι, shilling</i>	<i>τελειώνω, I finish</i>
<i>ὁ πόλεμος, war</i>	

EXERCISE 54

Translate:

1. *Ὁλος ὁ κόσμος εἶναι ἀνήσυχος.*
2. *Μερικὲς μέρες εἶναι πολύ ζεστές καὶ μερικὲς εἶναι πολύ κρύες.*
3. *Τριακόσιοι Σπαρτιάτες κάτω ἀπὸ τὸ Λεωνίδα πολέμησανε στίς Θερμοπύλες.*

4. Κάποιος κύριος ήρθε καί σās γόρενε.
5. Οί περισσότεροι άνθρωποι δέν είναι ούτε βλάκες ούτε ξυπνοι.
6. Έχασε χίλιες λίρες στά χαρτιά.
7. Κάθε πράμα στόν καιρό του.
8. Πολλοί εργάτες είναι χωρίς δουλειά.
9. Μοῦ εἶπε κάτι πολύ άπύθανο.
10. Εόδεγα τετρακόσιες τριάντα όκτώ λίρες δώδεκα σελίνια καί όκτώ πέννες.
11. 'Ο τελευταίος πόλεμος άρχισε τό χίλια έννιακόσια τριάντα έννιά καί τελείωσε τό χίλια έννιακόσια σαράντα πέντε.

EXERCISE 55

Write in full:

- (a) 1,743. (b) 634. (c) 42,770. (d) 10,500. (e) 836,124.
(f) 406. (g) 23,205. (h) 1,376,228.

SUFFIXES

The ending or suffix of the nominative case of nouns may indicate both gender and general meaning. No hard and fast rules can be given for the significance of suffixes but the following important ones may be noticed:

M nouns:

- τζής, denoting mostly jobs, e.g. ό καφετζής, café proprietor.
- ισμός, corresponding to English -ism, e.g. ό σοσιαλισμός, socialism.
- ās, denoting mostly jobs, e.g. ό γαλατάς, milkman.
- τής, denoting the performer of an action, e.g. ό παρατηρητής, observer.
- αίος, a mostly ethnic suffix, e.g. ό 'Αθηναίος, Athenian; 'Εβραίος, Hebrew, Jew.
- έζος, mostly ethnic, e.g. ό 'Εγγλέζος, Englishman; Κινέζος, Chinese.

F nouns:

- ισσα, ethnic and andronymic suffix, e.g. ή Σπαρτιάτισσα, Spartan woman; ή Βασίλισσα, Queen.
- τητα, denoting quality, e.g. ή ωραιότητα, beauty.
- άδα, e.g. ή πορτοκαλλάδα, orangeade.
- ίδα, mostly ethnic, e.g. ή 'Αγγλίδα, Englishwoman; ή Γερμανίδα, German woman.
- αινα, mostly denoting female sex, e.g. ή Κώσταίνα, Mrs. Costas; ή γιάτραινά, woman doctor, or the wife of the doctor.
- αριά, ή ξυγαριά, balance; δεκαριά, approximately ten (objects) together.

-σύνη, mostly denoting a quality, e.g. *ἡ καλωσύνη*, goodness, kindness.

-τρια, F suffix corresponding to an M suffix in -τής, e.g. *μαθητής*, pupil (masc.); *μαθήτρια*, pupil (fem.).

N nouns:

-ιμο, mostly denoting an action, e.g. *τό πλύσιμο*, washing.

-άδι, e.g. *τό πετράδι*, gem; *τό σκοτάδι*, darkness.

-μα, mostly denoting an action, e.g. *τό κάπνισμα*, smoking.

-τήρι, mostly denoting an instrument, e.g. *ξυπνητήρι*, alarm clock.

The most usual suffixes of adjectives are the following:

-άτικος, e.g. *Κυριακάτικος*, Sunday (adj.).

-ᾶτος, e.g. *γεμᾶτος*, full.

-ιάρης, having a rather pejorative sense, e.g. *ζηλιάρης*, jealous.

-ικός, e.g. *ἀδελφικός*, brotherly.

-ινός, e.g. *χειμερινός*, wintry.

-ωπός, mostly corresponding to the English suffix *-ish*, e.g. *κοκκινωπός*, reddish.

-ερός, e.g. *βροχερός*, rainy.

-ητικός, e.g. *συνκινητικός*, moving.

-ουλός, also similar to *-ish*, e.g. *παχουλός*, rather fat.

-ωτός, e.g. *ὀδοντωτός*, serrated.

-πλός, added to numerals, e.g. *διπλός*, double; *τριπλός*, treble.

-πλάσιος, added to numerals, e.g. *διπλάσιος*, twice as big; *πενταπλάσιος*, five times as big.

-ούτσικος, a diminutive suffix, e.g. *καλούτσικος*, quite good.

The diminutive suffixes for nouns are the following:

M nouns:

-ούλης, e.g. *ἀδερφούλης*, brother.

F nouns:

-ιτσα, e.g. *σαλατίτσα*, salad.

-ούλα, e.g. *ἀδερφούλα*, sister.

-πούλα, e.g. *βοσκοπούλα*, shepherdess.

-ούδα, e.g. *κοπελλούδα*, young girl.

N nouns:

-άκι, e.g. *τραπεζάκι*, small table.

-ούδι, e.g. *ἄγγελούδι*, little angel.

-πουλο, e.g. *βασιλόπουλο*, young prince.

The augmentative suffixes are the following:

M nouns:

-αρᾶς, e.g. *ψευταρᾶς*, big liar.

-αρος, e.g. *ψεύταρος*, big liar.

F nouns:

-άρα, e.g. *ποδάρα*, big foot.

COMBINATION OF WORDS

The combination of two or more words to form a compound is a common feature of the Greek language. Almost any part of speech can be used for such combinations but the main types of compound words consist of:

1. Two nouns, e.g.

Σάββατο-Κυριακή = τό σαββατοκύριακο, weekend
 άντρας-γυναίκα = τό άντρόγυνο, couple
 μαχαίρι-πηρούνι = τά μαχαιροπήρουνα, knives and forks, cutlery

2. An adjective* or other word and a noun, e.g.

πρώτο-μάστορας = ό πρωτομάστορας, master craftsman
 φίλο-λόγος = ό φιλόλογος, philologist
 παλιο-άνθρωπος = ό παλιάνθρωπος, rascal
 άρχι-τελώνης = ό άρχιτελώνης, chief customs officer

3. Almost any kind of word and an adjective, e.g.

όλο-άσπρος = όλόασπρος, all white
 πολυ-μαθής = πολυμαθής, learned
 κατά-μαύρος = κατάμαυρος, jet black
 προ-πολεμικός = προπολεμικός, pre-war
 άντι-παθητικός = άντιπαθητικός, unlikeable
 ύπερ-κομψός = ύπερκομψος, most elegant
 σό-κλειστός = μισόκλειστος, half-closed

Many adjectives may also take the negative prefix α- (or αν- in front of vowels), e.g.

ά-γνωστός = άγνωστος, unknown
 άν-ήσυχος = άνήσυχος, restless

* The adjective is usually in the N form.

COMBINATION OF WORDS

4. Two verbs together, e.g.

άνοίγω-κλείω = άνοιγοκλείω, I open and close
 πηγαίνω-έρχομαι = πηγαينوέρχομαι, I come and go

5. Almost any kind of word and a verb, e.g.

κρυφά-μιλώ = κρυφομιλώ, I talk quietly, whisper
 γλυκά-φιλώ = γλυκοφιλώ, I kiss sweetly
 χάμω-γελώ = χαμογελώ, I smile (lit. I laugh low)
 ξανά-δίνω = ξαναδίνω, I give back, I give again
 ξανά-διαβάζω = ξαναδιαβάζω, I re-read
 καλώς-δρρίζω = καλωσορίζω, I welcome
 στενά-χωρώ = στενοχωρώ, I vex, worry
 ανά-βαίνω = ανεβαίνω, I go up, ascend
 κατά-βαίνω = κατεβαίνω, I go down, descend
 άντι-δρώ = αντιδρώ, I react

2. Apparent idioms, i.e. those which, although containing the general elements of the language, sound peculiar to English-speaking people. A considerable part of the language is idiomatic in this respect, and only a few such idioms can be given here. But a knowledge and command of them is absolutely essential to anyone wishing to know the language properly.

IDIOMS

Idioms constitute a feature of all languages. For our purpose Greek idioms may be broadly divided into two classes:

1. Real idioms, i.e. those which do not conform to the general patterns of the language. They are mainly due to the lingering of older forms of the language or to the influence of foreign languages. Such idioms are the following:

ἐν τάξει, all right	ἐξ ἄλλου, besides
ἐν πάσῃ περιπτώσει, in any case	εἰ δ' ἄλλως, otherwise, or else
παραδείγματος χάριν, for example	στό κάτω τῆς γραφῆς, after all
φέρ' εἰπεῖν, for example	ὅσον ἀφορᾷ ἐμέ, as far as I am concerned
ἐξ ἴσου, equally	ἔχω ὑπ' ὄψῃ μου, I take into account
ἐν μέρει, partly	πρὸ παντός, above all
ἐν τούτοις, in spite of	ὅλως διόλου, completely
κατά τὰ ἄλλα, in other respects	πέραν πάσης ἀμφιβολίας, beyond all doubt
ἐκ μέρους σου, on your behalf	

2. Apparent idioms, i.e. those which, although conforming to the general patterns of the language, sound peculiar to English-speaking people. A considerable part of the language is idiomatic in this respect, and only a few such idioms can be given here. But a knowledge and command of them is absolutely essential to anyone wishing to know the language properly:

IDIOMS

τά κατάφερε, he managed it	κάνει κρύο, it is cold
τά ἔχασε, he got confused, embarrassed	πρόκειται νά πάω, I am to go, I shall go
τό ἔστρωσε στό φαί, he tucked in to the food	μ' ὄλο πού ἤξεραν, although they knew
τᾶκανε θάλασσα, he made a mess of it	ποτέ μου, never in my life
μοῦ ἀρέσει, I like	ὅλοι τους, all of them
ἔχω δίκαιο, I am right	ἔτσι κι' ἄλλιῶς, in any case
τί ἔχεις; what is the matter with you?	ἔτσι καί ἔτσι, so-so
ἔδω πού τὰ λέμε, by the way, now we are on the subject	πρῶτα-πρῶτα, first of all
χωρίς ἄλλο, without fail	κάνετε γρήγορα, be quick
κόψε το, cut it out	κάθε ἄλλο, on the contrary
ἄστα αὐτά, don't give me that	δέ βαρειέσαι, never mind, who cares, bother!
καί βέβαια, of course	δέν πειράζει, it doesn't matter
δέν εἶμαι δά καί βλάκας, I am not a fool	θά πᾶμε πού θά πᾶμε, we shall go in any case
ἄμέ, τί νόμιμες; Yes, what did you think?	λοιπόν, τί θά κάνουμε; well, what shall we do?

GENERAL EXERCISES

VOCABULARY

Τί γίνεστε; How are you?	ἡ ἡσυχία, quiet
ὁ ἴδιος, same	τό κοῖμα, pity
συμφωνῶ, I agree	πληρέστατα, most com- pletely
ἐρχόμενος, next	ἡ ἄδεια, leave
τίς προάλλες, the other day	ὁ χαιρετισμός, greeting
ἀντίο, good-bye	

EXERCISE 56

A Meeting in the Street

Translate:

Καλημέρα σας.
Τί γίνεστε;
Πολύ καλά, εὐχαριστῶ, ἐσεῖς;
Τά ἴδια.
Πῶς πάει ἡ δουλειά;
Ἡσυχία.
Εἶναι κοῖμα νά δουλεύει κανεῖς μ' ἓνα τόσο θανμάσιο καιρό.
Συμφωνῶ πληρέστατα.
Τήν ἐρχόμενην ἐβδομάδα ὅμως ἔχουμε δυό μέρες ἄδεια.
Τί γίνεται ὁ ἀδελφός σας;
Καλά εἶναι. Τίς προάλλες μέ ρωτοῦσε γιά σένα.
Νά τοῦ δώσεις πολλούς χαιρετισμούς. Ἀντίο.

GENERAL EXERCISES

VOCABULARY

ἐπόμενος, next	σκοπεύω, I intend
συνοδεύω, I accompany	τά καταφέρνω, I manage
προσπαθῶ, I try	τό νησί, island
ιδιαιτέρως, especially	κανονίζω, I fix, arrange
περνῶ, I pass	ἐπὶσχομαι, I promise
βέβαιος, certain	

EXERCISE 57

A Trip to the Islands

Translate:

Τήν ἐπόμενην ἐβδομάδα σκοπεύω νά πάω ταξίδι στή Μύκονο
γιά λίγες μέρες. Θάθελες νά μέ συνοδέψεις;
Θάθελα πολύ ἀλλά δέν ξέρω ἂν θά τά καταφέρω.
Θά προσπαθήσω ὅμως καί θά σοῦ πῶ αὐριο.
Μ' ἀρέσουν πολύ τά νησιά τοῦ Αἰγαίου καί ιδιαιτέρως ἡ
Μύκονος.
Προσπάθησε νά τά κανονίσεις νά ἔρθεις καί θά περάσουμε
θανμάσια.
Δέ σοῦ ἐπὶσχομαι, ἀλλά νομίζω πῶς εἶναι σχεδόν βέβαιο
ὅτι θά ἔρθω.

VOCABULARY

κανένας, no one, one, some παίζω, I play
δοκιμάζω, I try ἀποφασίζω, I decide

EXERCISE 58

An Evening Out

Translate:

Ποῦ θά πάμε ἀπόψε; Νά πάμε σινεμά, θέατρο ἢ σέ κανένα χορό;

Νομίζω πῶς ἔχει ἓνα καλό φίλμ στού Παλλάς.

Παίζει ὁ Λόρενς Ὀλίβιε καί ἡ Τζήν Σίμμονς.

Μήπως εἶναι ὁ Ἀμλετ τοῦ Σαίξπηρ;

Ναί, αὐτό εἶναι.

Νομίζεις πῶς θά βροῦμε θέσεις εὐκολα;

Δοκιμάζουμε κι' ἂν δέ βροῦμε θέσεις πᾶμε σέ κανένα χορό.

*Ἡ μήπως θάθελες νά πάμε νά φᾶμε καί νά πιοῦμε στήν Πλάκα;

*Ὅπως νομίζεις. Τό ἀφίνω σέ σένα. Τηλεφῶνα μου ὅμως τί ἀποφάσεις στίς πέντε τό ἀπόγευμα.

VOCABULARY

Ἀχιλλεύς, gen. Ἀχιλλέως,	ἐν τάξει, all right
Achilles	τό στρίψιμο, turning
ὀλόισια, straight	δυσκολεύομαι, I find diffi-
στρίβω, I turn	culty
ὁ ἀστυφύλακας, policeman	ἡ γωνιά, corner

EXERCISE 59

Asking the Way

Translate:

Θέλω νά πάω στήν ὁδό Ἀχιλλέως, ἀλλά ξέχασα τό δρόμο.

Μπορεῖτε, σᾶς παρακαλῶ, νά μοῦ δείξετε τό δρόμο;

Νά πᾶς ὀλόισια καί στού τρίτο στρίψιμο νά στρίψεις ἀριστερά.

Μετά νά πάρεις τό δεύτερο στρίψιμο δεξιά καί θά βρεθεῖς στήν ὁδό Ἀχιλλέως.

Εὐχαριστῶ πολύ.

*Ἀν δυσκολευτεῖς, ρώτησε τόν ἀστυφύλακα πού στέκεται στή γωνιά τοῦ δρόμου.

*Ἐν τάξει. Νομίζω ὅμως πῶς θά τόν βρῶ χωρίς καμμιὰ δυσκολία.

VOCABULARY

ἐμπρός, hallo	ἡ ὑπόθεση, matter
ἀναφέρω, I mention	διαθέσιμος, available
ἀλό, hallo	τυχερός, lucky
ἀκριβῶς, just	ἡ διεύθυνση, address
ὕποχρεος, obliged	περίφημος, wonderful

EXERCISE 60

Finding a Flat

Translate:

Μπορῶ νά μιλήσω στόν κ. Ἀλέκο παρακαλῶ;

*Ένα λεπτό, παρακαλῶ.

*Εμπρός.

*Ο κ. Ἀλέκος;

*Ο ἴδιος.

*Ο κ. Πάνος ἐδῶ. Εἶναι γιά τήν ὑπόθεση τοῦ διαμερίσματος πού σᾶς ἀνάφερα τίς προάλλες. Μήπως ἔχετε κανένα διαθέσιμο τώρα.

Μιά στιγμή νά κοιτάξω, κ. Πάνο. Ἀλό. Εἶστε πολύ τυχερός, κ. Πάνο. Ἔχω ἀκριβῶς ἓνα πού σᾶς κάνει περίφημα. Πότε μπορεῖτε νά τό δεῖτε;

Μπορῶ σήμερα ἢ αὔριο, ἀλλά μετά τίς ἔξι.

*Εν τάξει. Θά σᾶς δόσω τή διεύθυνση καί μπορεῖτε νά πᾶτε καί μόνος σας.

Εὐχαριστῶ πολύ. Σᾶς εἶμαι πολύ ὑπόχρεος.

Εγώ, εὐχαριστῶ.

VOCABULARY

χαλῶ, I change	*Ἀγγλικός, English
εὐχαρίστως, with pleasure	τουριστικός, tourist
τό πρακτορεῖο, agency	ἡ Τράπεζα, Bank
ἀνοιχτός, open	τό καλοκαίρι, summer
ἐξαργυρώνω, I cash, change	ξένος, foreign, guest
τό χαρτονόμισμα, note	χρυσός, golden
περίπου, about	χάρτινος, made of paper
ἡ πληροφορία, information	γειά, good-bye

EXERCISE 61

Changing Money

Translate:

Μπορεῖτε σᾶς παρακαλῶ νά μοῦ πεῖτε ποῦ μπορῶ νά χαλάσω μερικές Ἀγγλικές λίρες;

Εὐχαρίστως. Νά πᾶτε σέ κανένα τουριστικό πρακτορεῖο ἢ σέ καμμιά Τράπεζα.

*Ὡς ποιὰ ὥρα εἶναι ἀνοιχτές οἱ Τράπεζες τό καλοκαίρι;

*Ὡς τίς τρεῖς τό ἀπόγευμα. Νά, ἐκεῖ κάτω εἶναι ἡ Τράπεζα τῆς Ἑλλάδος. Ἐκεῖ μπορεῖτε νά ἐξαργυρώσετε ὅλα τά ξένα χαρτονομίσματα.

Ξέρετε πόσο πάει ἡ λίρα αὐτές τίς μέρες;

*Ἡ χρυσή λίρα πάει περίπου τριακόσιες δραχμές, καί ἡ χάρτινη περίπου ὀγδόντα τέσσερις.

Εὐχαριστῶ πολύ γιά τίς πληροφορίες. Γειά σας.

VOCABULARY

τό ἐστιατόριο, restaurant	ἡ ὁδός, sheet
τό Πανεπιστήμιο, University	ἀκριβός, expensive
ὁ κατάλογος, list	τό φαγητό, meal
ὁρίστε, here you are	τό ἀρνάκι, lamb
ὁ φούρνος, oven	ἡ μερίδα, portion
ἡ σαλατίτσα, salad	ἡ μπουνκάλα, bottle
ἡ ρετσίνα, retsina	συναντιέμαι, I meet
ἡ Ὁμόνοια, Concord	τό ξενοδοχεῖο, hotel
τό τρόλλεϋ, trolley-bus	ἡ καθαριότης, cleanliness
στοιχίζω, I cost	πληρώνω, I pay
μονός, single	τό πρόγευμα, breakfast
εὐχαριστημένος, pleased	μᾶλλον, rather
βολικός, convenient	τό γκαρσόν, waiter
ὁ λογαριασμός, bill	τά ρέστα, change

EXERCISE 62

At the Restaurant

Translate:

Ποῦ ἔχει ἓνα καλὸ ἐστιατόριο;
 Στὴν ὁδὸ Πανεπιστημίου.
 Εἶναι ἀκριβό;
 Ἔτσι κι ἔτσι.
 Μοῦ δίνετε ἓνα κατάλογο φαγητῶν, παρακαλῶ.
 Ὁρίστε, κύριε. Ἔχω θαναμάσιο ἀρνάκι τοῦ φούρνου.
 Ὡραία. Φέρε μας δυὸ μερίδες μέ σαλατίτσα καὶ νερό κρύο
 θέλετε καὶ κρασί;
 Ναί, μιά μπουνκάλα ρετσίνα.
 Λοιπόν, πότε θά πᾶμε νά δοῦμε τὴν Ἀκρόπολη;
 Ἄν θέλεις, πᾶμε τὸ ἀπόγευμα.
 Ἐν τάξει, τί ὥρα;

Στις τρεῖς καὶ μισή.
 Ποῦ θά συναντηθοῦμε;
 Στὴν Ὁμόνοια, ἔξω ἀπὸ τὸ ξενοδοχεῖο Αὔρα.
 Μένεις ἐκεῖ κοντά;
 Ὁχι, μένω μέ φίλους στὴν Κυψέλη, μὰ εἶναι μόνο μερικά
 λεπτά μέ τὸ τρόλλεϋ. Ἐσὺ μένεις κοντά στὴν Ὁμόνοια;
 Ναί, μένω σ' ἓνα μικρὸ ξενοδοχεῖο ποῦ λέγεται "Ἡ
 Καθαριότης".
 Πόσα σοῦ στοιχίζει;
 Πληρώνω 40 δραχμές γιὰ ἓνα μονὸ δωμάτιο καὶ πρόγευμα.
 Εἶσαι εὐχαριστημένος;
 Μᾶλλον. Ἐξ ἄλλου μοῦ εἶναι ἀρκετὰ βολικό γιατί εἶναι
 σὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλεως.
 Γκαρσόν, Πόσα ἔχουμε νά πληρώσουμε;
 Ἀμέσως. Θά σᾶς φέρω τὸ λογαριασμό. 64 δραχμές.
 Ὁρίστε τὰ ρέστα σας.
 Εὐχαριστῶ πολύ.
 Σᾶς ἄρεσε τὸ φαγητό;
 Ναί, ἦταν περιφημο.

VOCABULARY

ὁ Αὔγουστος, August	ὄρθιος, standing
ἡ ἐκδρομή, excursion	πειράζει, it matters
τό πιτό, drink	ἀπέχει, is distant
τό λεωφορεῖο, bus	σκιερός, shaded
καθιστός, sitting	φυσικά, naturally
μαχαιροπήρουνα, knives and forks	τό πεῦκο, pine-tree
ἡ διαδρομή, trip	τό μαγιό, swimming-costume
ἡ ἄμμουδιά, sandy beach	γαλάζιος, blue
προτιμῶ, I prefer	διάφανος, transparent
πυκνός, thick	κολυμπῶ, I swim
ὁ γιάλος, sea-shore	τό παιχνίδι, game
μαγευτικός, delightful	ἡ ταβέρνα, tavern, pub
ὁ οὐρανός, sky	τό φαί (pl. τά φαγιά), food
τό κρύσταλλο, crystal	παγωμένος, iced
θαλασσινός, of the sea	τό φρούτο, fruit
ἡ ἡλιοθεραπεία, sun-bathing	τό φαγοπότι, eating and drinking
στρώνω, spread	ὁ ὕπνος, sleep
λείπω, I am away	τό μπάνιο, bath, bathe
ἀπαραίτητος, indispensable	ἀπολαμβάνω, enjoy
ἡ ἐποχή, season	ψόφιος, dead
ἡ κουβέρτα, blanket	ὁ γυρισμός, return
ἀκολουθῶ, I follow	τό γέλιο, laughter
τό φεγγάρι, moon	ἡ κόπωση, fatigue
ἡ Παναγία, Virgin Mary	συνοδεύομαι, I am accompanied
τό βουνό, mountain	τό τραγούδι, song
τό πιάτο, plate	
ὁ συνωστισμός, crowding	

EXERCISE 63

A Day by the Sea

Translate:

Στίς δεκαπέντε Αὐγούστου, πού εἶναι τῆς Παναγίας, ὅλοι πᾶνε ἐκδρομή στή θάλασσα ἢ στό βουνό. Ἐκεῖνη τή μέρα ξυπνᾶνε πολύ πρωτῶ, ἐτοιμάζουν φαγητά καί πιτά καί τά βάζουν σέ μεγάλα καλάθια, μαζί μέ ποτήρια, πιτά καί μαχαιροπήρουνα. Ἄλλοι πηγαίνουν μέ ἰδιωτικά αὐτοκίνητα, ἄλλοι μέ λεωφορεῖα. Ἐπειδὴ ὑπάρχει πολὺς κόσμος, γίνεται παντοῦ μεγάλος συνωστισμός γιὰ νά βροῦν θέσεις. Πολλοί δὲν προκίετα νά πᾶνε καθιστοὶ ἀλλὰ ὄρθιοι. Δέν πειράζει ὅμως, ἀφοῦ ἡ διαδρομή δέν εἶναι μεγάλη.

Ἡ θάλασσα δέν ἀπέχει πολὺ, καί ὅσοι πᾶνε ἐκεῖ θά βροῦν μίαν ὥρα ἄμμουδιά. Πρώτη τους δουλειά εἶναι νά ψάξουν νά βροῦν ἕνα σκιερὸ μέρος. Ὁ καθένας προτιμᾷ φυσικά ἕνα μεγάλο καί πυκνὸ πεῦκο κοντά στό γιάλο. Οἱ νέοι βάζουν ἀμέσως τά μαγιό τους καί πέφτουν στό νερό. Ἡ θάλασσα τῆς Ἑλλάδας εἶναι μαγευτικὴ, γαλάζια σάν τὸν οὐρανὸ τῆς, καί καθαρή καί διάφανη σάν κρύσταλλο. Κολυμπᾶνε, παίζουν θαλασσινὰ παιχνίδια καί κάνουν ἡλιοθεραπεία μέ τίς ὥρες.

Τὸ μεσημέρι μερικοὶ τρῶνε σέ ταβέρνες. Μά οἱ περισσότεροι τὸ στρώνουν κάτω, καί τρῶνε τά φαγιά πού ἔχουν φέρε μαζί τους. Δέν λείπει οὔτε τὸ κρασί οὔτε ἡ παγωμένη μύζα. Ἀπαραίτητα εἶναι καί τά φρούτα τῆς ἐποχῆς. Ὑστερὰ ἀπὸ τὸ φαγοπότι, στρώνουν τίς κουβέρτες τους καί τὸ ρίχνουν στὸν ὕπνο. Τὸ ἀπόγευμα ἀκολουθεῖ ἄλλο μπάνιο καί ἄλλο φαγοπότι, καί ὅταν ἔχει φεγγάρι μένουν ὡς ἀργά γιὰ νά τὸ ἀπολαύσουν. Ἄν καί ὅλοι εἶναι ψόφιοι στὴν κόπωση, ὁ γυρισμός στό σπίτι συνοδεύεται μέ γέλια καί τραγούδια.

VOCABULARY

ἄμα, when, as soon as	Νορβηγός, Norwegian
ἀπομένω, I stay	ξάφνου, suddenly
βαρὺς, heavy, serious	ξεπροβοδίζω, I see off
βορινός, northern	ὀλόκληρος, entire
ἡ γλῶσσα, tongue	ὁ πιλότος, pilot
ὁ θρύλος, legend	ἡ πορεία, course, passage
κανονικός, regular	παλιός, old
τό καράβι, boat, ship	τό πλοῖο, ship
ὁ λιμένας, port	ὁ πλοίαρχος, captain
μακρινός, distant	ἡ πιλοτίνα, pilot-boat
μονολογῶ, I talk to myself	συλλογίζομαι, I think
τό τσιμπούκι, pipe	συλλογισμένος, thoughtful
φορτηγός, cargo (adj.)	τό στῆθος, chest
χωμάτινος, clay (adj.)	σταυρωμένος, crossed

EXERCISE 64

Translate:

*Ο πιλότος Νάγκελ

*Ο Νάγκελ Χάρμπορ, Νορβηγός πιλότος στό Κολόμπο
 ἄμα ἔδινε κανονική πορεία στά καράβια
 πού φεῦγαν γιά τούς ἄγνωστους καί μακρινούς λιμένες
 κατέβαινε στή βάρκα του βαρὺς, συλλογισμένος,
 μέ τά χοντρά τά χέρια του στό στῆθος σταυρωμένα,
 καπνίζοντας ἓνα παλιό χωμάτινο τσιμπούκι,
 καί σέ μιά γλῶσσα βορινή σιγά μονολογώντας
 ἔφευγε μόλις χάνονταν ὀλότελα τά πλοῖα.

*Ο Νάγκελ Χάρμπορ, πλοίαρχος μέ φορτηγά καράβια,
 ἀφοῦ τόν κόσμο γύρισε ὀλόκληρο, μιά μέρα
 κουράστηκε κι' ἀπόμεινε πιλότος στό Κολόμπο.

Μά πάντα συλλογίζονταν τή μακρινή του χώρα
 καί τά νησιά ποῦναι γεμάτα θρύλους—τά Λοφοῦτεν.
 Καί κάποια μέρα ἐπέθανε στή πιλοτίνα μέσα
 ξάφνου σάν ξεπροβόδιζε τό στήμερ τάνκ Φιόρτ Φόλτεν
 ὅπου ἔφευγε καπνίζοντας γιά τά νησιά Λοφοῦτεν.

N. KABBALIAS

VOCABULARY

ἀμίλητος, speechless	τό νοσοκομεῖο, hospital
ἀπάνω, on	νοσταλγικός, nostalgic
ὁ δεκανέας, corporal	ὅλο, all the time
ἐπ' ὤμου, slope arms	πέρα, beyond
καμαρωτά, jauntily	πρᾶος, meek
κάν, even	τό ποδάρι, foot
κύρ, Mister (familiar)	ὁ στρατιώτης, soldier
ὁ λάκκος, hole	τό σημείο, point
μουρμουρίζω, I murmur	σκεπάζω, I cover
φαντάρος, soldier	ὁ φονκαράκος, poor chap
μά, but	τό χωριό, village

EXERCISE 65

Translate:

*Ο Μιχαλιός

Τό Μιχαλιό τόν πήρανε στρατιώτη,
 Καμαρωτά ξεκίνησε κι' ὠραία
 μέ τό Μαρή καί μέ τόν Παναγιώτη.
 Δέ μπόρεσε νά μάθει καν τό "ἐπ' ὤμου".
 "Ὅλο ἐμονρμουρίζε· "Κύρ-Δεκανέα,
 ἄσε με νά γυρίσω στό χωριό μου."

Τόν ἄλλο χρόνο, στό νοσοκομεῖο,
 ἀμίλητος τόν σῶσανό κοιτοῦσε.

Ἐκάρφωνε πέρα, σ' ἓνα σημεῖο,
τό βλέμμα του νοσταλγικό καί πρᾶο,
σά νάλεγε, σά νά παρακαλοῦσε·
“Ἀφῆστε με στό σπῖτι μου νά πάω.”

Κι' ὁ Μιχαλῖος ἐπέθανε στρατιώτης.
Τόν ξεπροβόδισαν κάτι φαντάροι
μαζί τους ὁ Μαρῆς κι' ὁ Παναγιώτης.
Ἀπάνω του σκεπάστηκεν ὁ λάκκος
μά τοῦ ἔφησαν ἀπ' ἔξω τό ποδάρι·
Ἦταν λίγο μακρὺς ὁ φουκαράκος.

K. KAPYOTAKHΣ

VOCABULARY

*Ἀλεξανδρινός, Alexandrian	ἐμπροστά, in front
τό ἀδέρφι, brother	ἐμορφιά, beauty
ἡ ἀνθοδέσμη, bunch of flowers	ἐνθουσιάζομαι, I get enthusiastic
ὁ ἀμέθυστος, amethyst	ἐπευφημῶ, I cheer
ἀνοιχτός, open, light (colour)	ἐλληνικά, Greek
ὁ αὐλικός, courtier	ἐβραϊκά, Hebrew
αἰγυπτιακός, Egyptian	ἡ ἑορτή, festivity
ἀξίζω, I am worth	ἡ φορὰ, time
βέβαια, of course	ἡ ζώνη, belt
ἡ βασιλεία, kingdom	θεατρικός, theatrical
τό γυμνάσιο, gymnasium	τό θέαμα, spectacle
τό γαλάζιο, blue colour	κηρύττω, I declare
γοητευμένος, charmed	ἡ κορδέλλα, ribbon
διπλός, double	κεντημένος, embroidered
δεμένος, tied	τό κατόρθωμα, feat
	κούφιος, empty

μαζεύομαι, I gather	ποιητικός, poetical
τό μετάξι, silk	ἡ πολυτέλεια, luxury
τό μαργαριτάρι, pearl	ροδόχρους,* pink
νιώθω, I understand	ἡ σειρά, row
ἡ παράταξις, parade	τριανταφυλλί, rose-coloured
τά ποδήματα, shoes	ὁ ὑάκινθος, hyacinth
πύτερο, more	ἡ χάρις, charm

EXERCISE 66

Translate:

*Ἀλεξανδρινοὶ βασιλεῖς

Μαζεύθηκαν οἱ Ἀλεξανδρινοί,
νά δοῦν τῆς Κλεοπάτρας τὰ παιδιά,
τόν Καισαρίωνα καί τὰ μικρά του ἀδέρφια,
Ἀλέξανδρο καί Πτολεμαῖο, πού πρώτη
φορὰ τὰ βγάζαν ἔξω στοῦ Γυμνασίου
ἐκεῖ νά τὰ κηρύξουν βασιλεῖς
μέσ στη λαμπρὴ παράταξη τῶν στρατιωτῶν.

Ὁ Ἀλέξανδρος—τόν εἶπαν βασιλέα
τῆς Ἀρμενίας, τῆς Μηδίας καί τῶν Πάρθων.
Ὁ Πτολεμαῖος—τόν εἶπαν βασιλέα
τῆς Κιλικίας, τῆς Συρίας καί τῆς Φωνίκης.
Ὁ Καισαρίων στέκονταν πῶς ἐμπροστά,
ντυμένος σέ μετάξι τριανταφυλλί
στό στῆθος του ἀνθοδέσμη ἀπὸ ὑακίνθους,
ἡ ζώνη του διπλὴ σειρὰ σαπφείρων κι' ἀμεθύστων·
δεμένα τὰ ποδήματα του μ' ἄσπρες
κορδέλες κεντημένες μέ ροδόχροα μαργαριτάρια.
Αὐτόν τόν εἶπαν πύτερο ἀπὸ τοὺς μικροὺς,
αὐτόν τόν εἶπαν Βασιλέα τῶν Βασιλέων.

*ροδόχρους is a *katharévousa* form. The following passage contains a number of such forms but they should present no difficulty.

Οἱ Ἀλεξανδρινοὶ ἐνωθὺν βέβαια
 ποὺ ἦσαν λόγια αὐτὰ καὶ θεατρικά.
 Ἀλλὰ ἡ ἡμέρα ἦτανε ζεστή καὶ ποιητική,
 ὁ οὐρανὸς ἓνα γαλάζιο ἀνοιχτό,
 τό Ἀλεξανδρινὸ Γυμνάσιον ἓνα
 θριαμβικὸ κατόρθωμα τῆς τέχνης,
 τῶν αὐλικῶν ἡ πολυτέλεια ἐκτακτη,
 ὁ Καίσαρ ὅλο χάρις κι' ἐμορφιά
 (τῆς Κλεοπάτρας νιός, αἷμα τῶν Λαγιδῶν)
 κι' οἱ Ἀλεξανδρινοὶ ἔτρεχαν πιά στὴν ἐορτὴ
 κι' ἐνθουσιάζονταν κι' ἐπευφημοῦσαν
 ἑλληνικὰ κι' αἰγυπτιακὰ καὶ ποιοὶ ἐβραϊκά,
 γοητευμένοι, μέ τ' ὥραϊο θέαμα,
 μ' ὅλο πού, βέβαια, ἤξεραν τί ἀξίζαν αὐτὰ,
 τί κόυφια λόγια ἦσανε αὐτές οἱ βασιλεῖες.

K. KABAΦΗΣ

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

EXERCISE 1

1. Mother is good.
2. The car is very big.
3. The night is wonderful.
4. The large bar is full.
5. Father is very good.
6. She is a beautiful girl.
7. She is a very good mother.
8. He is a very good man (person).
9. Life is difficult.
10. Breakfast is ready.

EXERCISE 2

1. -ό.
2. -ή.
3. -ο.
4. -ός.
5. -ή.
6. είναι.
7. -ος.
8. -η.
9. -ο.
10. -α.
11. -ο.

EXERCISE 3

1. That woman was very beautiful.
2. This child is very happy.
3. The night-club was not full.
4. George is very silly.
5. Life is beautiful.
6. Mother is a very good woman.
7. Father is a wonderful man.
8. Mary was very serious.
9. This garden isn't big.
10. This isn't correct.

11. Russell is a great philosopher.
12. Plato was a great philosopher.

EXERCISE 4

1. The nights are cool.
2. The days are not very cool.
3. The consequences were serious.
4. Money is indispensable.
5. These young men are happy.
6. Two green eyes.
7. Lies are bad.
8. Black eyes are beautiful.
9. Athens is enchanting.
10. One child was here. The other children were very far away.
11. These two rooms are large and cool.
12. The men, women and children are happy.
13. A lot of money is not necessary.
14. Fair hair is beautiful.
15. The other woman was not very good.
16. This colour is green.
17. This water is cold.

EXERCISE 5

1. -α. 2. -ου. 3. -ός. 4. -ο. 5. -α. 6. -ες. 7. -α. 8. -ή.
9. -η. 10. -α.

EXERCISE 6

1. Your sister is sad.
2. Our uncle is very good, but he's poor.
3. Their hands are black.

4. My aunt was very happy.
5. His head is a bit small.
6. Her hair is fair and her eyes blue.
7. His new car is black.
8. My house is small but cool.
9. My brother is thin but very strong.
10. George is a friend of mine but John isn't.
11. His family are poor.
12. Her hands are thin.

EXERCISE 7

1. This room is his.
2. These are our own children.
3. Is this hat yours?
4. The middle of the day was very hot.
5. These cigarettes are hers.
6. His voice is very powerful (loud).
7. George is one of us (*or* one of our men).
8. His feet are big.
9. This is my own affair.
10. It is not your business (*or* your sort of work).
11. Are all these cigarettes yours?
12. His heart is a very warm one.

EXERCISE 8

1. My sister's house is very large.
2. The garden of our house is small but beautiful.
3. This Englishman's name is John.
4. This English lady's name is Margaret.
5. Mrs. Benaki's party was wonderful.
6. The midday sun is very hot.
7. Andrew's hair is black.

8. Mr. Andoni's family are very rich.
9. The light in your little room isn't very strong.
10. Spring in Athens is enchanting.
11. The Aegean sun is hot and pleasant.
12. This woman's eyes are very black.
13. My friend's office is a bit small, but cool and pleasant.
14. The engine of your car is very powerful.
15. That young Englishwoman's hair is fair.

EXERCISE 9

1. The rooms of large houses are cool.
2. The life of workmen is hard.
3. My brother is only eight years old.
4. The engines of good cars are powerful.
5. My young sister is four years old.
6. Beautiful women's hands are slender.
7. The story of the three children and their poor mother was very moving.

EXERCISE 10

1. I want a little water.
2. He* is in Cyprus.
3. The motor-car is in the garage.
4. The whole family are at home.
5. I have no money.
6. I have joy in my heart.
7. The man in the tall hat is on the veranda.
8. That woman with the grey hair is my mother.
9. My brother went to England and my sister to Greece.
10. My room is above yours.
11. He was in his office for a long time.

* *είναι* may be rendered by *he is* or *she is* or *it is* or *they are*, according to the context.

12. Our house is near the sea.
13. His feet are in the water.
14. I want a glass of wine.
15. My uncle has come from America.
16. I saw your friend John in Athens.
17. This hat is for Costa.
18. Give me a glass of water.
19. Give me three bottles of wine.
20. My father has gone to Athens to get work.

EXERCISE 11

1. I saw your brother in the street.
2. The water is on the table.
3. My sister is in France.
4. My father's car is near the entrance to the cinema.
5. My uncle's got a lot of money.
6. My young brother is only five years old.
7. That man with the grey hair is my father.
8. Where's Andrew? He's at the cinema.
9. Where's your brother? He's gone to the sea with his friends.
10. The light in this room isn't strong.
11. Where's Costas now? He's at his office.
12. Where's my overcoat? It's in the living room.
13. Give me a little wine, please.
14. Now I have no money.

EXERCISE 12

1. *Ὁ πατέρας μου είναι στο Λονδίνο.*
2. *Τά παιδιά είναι κοντά στη θάλασσα.*
3. *Τό κρασί είναι μέσα στο μπουνκάλι.*
4. *Τό μπουνκάλι είναι πάνω στο τραπέζι.*
5. *Ἐχῶ ἕναν ἀδελφὸ καὶ μιὰν ἀδελφή.*

6. Ὁ Γιώργος πήγε στη Θεσσαλονίκη.
7. Ὁ φίλος σου εἶναι στή βεράντα.
8. Τό τηλέφωνο εἶναι στό σαλόνι.
9. Ποῦ εἶναι τό πρωῒνό μου;
10. Τό πρωῒνό εἶναι στή κουζίνα.
11. Ποῦ εἶναι τά παιδιά;
12. Τά παιδιά εἶναι στόν κήπο.
13. Ἐκεῖνος ὁ ψηλός ἄνθρωπος εἶναι ὁ θεῖος μου.
14. Πήγε στήν Ἀγγλία μέ ἀεροπλάνο.
15. Πήγε μέ τόν ἀδελφό μου.
16. Ἡ μητέρα μου δέν εἶναι στό σπίτι τώρα.
17. Ὡλη ἡ οἰκογένεια πήγε στή θάλασσα.
18. Δέν ἔχω πολλά λεφτά.
19. Θέλω λίγο νερό.
20. Ὁ ἀδελφός μου εἶναι στή δουλειά του, τώρα.
21. Τό τηλέφωνο δέν εἶναι κοντά στήν πόρτα.
22. Τό παιδί εἶναι κάτω ἀπό τό τραπέζι.
23. Αὐτό τό κρασί εἶναι γιά τόν πατέρα σου.
24. Δόσε μου λίγο νερό, παρακαλῶ.
25. Δόσε μου δέκα τσιγάρα καί ἓνα κοντί σπύρτα.

EXERCISE 13

1. τρεῖς καί δεκαπέντε. 2. δώδεκα. 3. ἐννιά παρὰ δέκα. 4. ἐφτά παρὰ τέταρτο. 5. τέσσερις καί πέντε. 6. ἐννέα καί δέκα. 7. ἐφτάμιση. 8. δεκάμιση. 9. μία. 10. τέσσερις παρὰ τέταρτο. 11. μία καί τέσσερα. 12. ὀγδόντα . . . εἴκοσι. 13. ἐνενήντα . . . τριάντα. 14. ἐξηνταπέντε . . . πέντε.

EXERCISE 14

1. Saturday is the last day of the week.
2. Costas went to the sea on Wednesday.

3. Sunday is a pleasant day.
4. A week has seven days.
5. Renos is (the) second (pupil) in his class.
6. Five hundredths are equal to one twentieth.
7. One thirteenth is equal to two twenty-sixths.
8. Half an hour is equal to thirty minutes.

EXERCISE 15

1. Your house is smaller than ours.
2. John is bigger (older) than Peter.
3. This is the best of all.
4. Plato was the greatest philosopher of (in) Greece.
5. This work is most difficult.
6. This wine is stronger than that.
7. Myconos is more beautiful but much hotter than Kavalla.
8. England is bigger than Ireland.

EXERCISE 16

1. γνρίσω. 2. προσέξω. 3. σταματήσω. 4. ἀνάψω.
5. θαρρήσω. 6. μπορέσω. 7. μοιάσω. 8. παρακολοιθήσω. 9. ζητήσω. 10. πιάσω. 11. κρύψω.
12. χαμογελάσω. 13. φτάσω. 14. προχωρήσω.
15. ξυπνήσω. 16. κόψω. 17. γεμίσω. 18. προσπαθήσω. 19. ξέρω. 20. ζήσω. 21. ρωτήσω.
22. ἔχω. 23. νομίσω. 24. μιλήσω. 25. δουλέψω.
26. δείξω. 27. προτείνω. 28. φύγω. 29. πιῶ.
30. καταλάβω. 31. πῶ. 32. περάσω. 33. δῶ.
34. δόσω. 35. μείνω.

EXERCISE 17

1. δείχνω. 2. φέρω. 3. κρύβω. 4. συνεχίζω.
5. χορεύω. 6. ἀπαντῶ. 7. τρώγω. 8. λέγω.

9. κουνῶ. 10. γελῶ. 11. ζητῶ. 12. φροντίζω.
 13. προχωρῶ. 14. κοιτάζω. 15. μπορῶ. 16. ἔχω.
 17. φτάνω. 18. κάνω. 19. ἐξετάζω. 20. κλείω.
 21. κρατῶ. 22. χαλῶ. 23. προσπαθῶ. 24. βάζω.
 25. καταλαβαίνω. 26. βλέπω.

EXERCISE 18

1. I go to work by car.
2. I have only three pounds.
3. I take (attend) piano lessons.
4. I see an aeroplane.
5. I want a little water.
6. I have one brother and two sisters.
7. I know your uncle.
8. Now I am eating.

EXERCISE 19

1. I shall speak with courage.
2. I shall go to America.
3. On Saturday I shall go to the sea.
4. I shall eat roast lamb.
5. I shall go to the cinema and see *Alice in Wonderland*.
6. I shall travel all through the East.
7. I will answer your question.
8. Tomorrow I shall wake up at seven in the morning.
9. Tomorrow I shall be reading from 3 until 6 in the afternoon.

EXERCISE 20

1. In the autumn I shall take (attend) English lessons.
2. Do you see that aeroplane on the horizon?

3. We have money but we don't have quietness.
4. Would you like (do you want) a little water?
5. Father is going (will go) to Germany.
6. Where are you staying?
7. I am staying at the Hotel Astoria.
8. Do you know my uncle? Yes, but he isn't a friend of mine.
9. I don't understand.
10. What do you want, please?
11. Nothing, thank you.
12. I smoke ten cigarettes a day.
13. Why are you laughing, may I ask?

EXERCISE 21

1. Κλείω τό παράθυρο.
2. Θά πάμε στή Γαλλία.
3. Δέ θέλουν τσάϊ.
4. Δουλεύω στήν πόλη.
5. Ἔχεις πολλά χρήματα;
6. Παρακολουθῶ μαθήματα μουσικῆς.
7. Βλέπεις μιὰ βάρκα στή θάλασσα;
8. Ὁ πατέρας μου δέ βλέπει πολύ μακ ριά.
9. Θά πάμε στήν Ἀμερική καί ὁ Γιάννης θά πάει στή Γαλλία.
10. Καπνίζετε;
11. Δέν καπνίζω.
12. Δέν πίνουμε μπύρα.
13. Θέλω ἕνα ποτήρι κρασί.
14. Θέλουμε ἕνα σπῆτι κοντά στή θάλασσα.
15. Αὔριο θά πάμε στή Μύκονο.
16. Δέ θέλω τσάϊ, θέλω καφέ.

EXERCISE 22

1. γνώρισα. 2. νόμισα. 3. μάζεψα. 4. έκοψα. 5. έφερα.
6. έφτασα. 7. έψαξα. 8. είδα. 9. κατέβηκα.
10. άπάντησα. 11. πήγα. 12. κράτησα. 13. ρώτησα.
14. μπόρεσα. 15. κούνησα. 16. σταμάτησα. 17. έζησα.
18. προχώρησα. 19. έφαγα. 20. έμεινα. 21. έχασα.
22. είχα.

EXERCISE 23

1. The officers left the meeting.
2. The blood went (up) to his head.
3. This man knew a lot.
4. The fat man didn't answer.
5. I sent my mother a packet.
6. They lived for three years in Naples.
7. My father always had money.
8. Yesterday I saw George on the train.
9. Mrs. Lambridi nodded her head.
10. At the door Helena turned round.
11. I stayed at the hotel.
12. He went close to him and spoke to him.
13. They continued their conversation upon various questions.
14. I received your letter.
15. Light (or he lit) a match.
16. Come home (or he came home) early.

EXERCISE 24

1. Πήγε στην 'Ιταλία.
2. Πήγαμε στη Γερμανία.
3. Πήγαν στην 'Αγγλία.

4. Πήγατε στη Γαλλία.
5. Πήγες στην 'Αμερική;
6. Πήγατε στο θέατρο χθές;
7. 'Ακουσες;
8. 'Ο Πέτρος δέν κατάλαβε.
9. 'Εμειναν στό σπίτι μας γιά πολόν καιρό.
10. Είδα τόν άδελφό σου στη Λευκοσία.
11. Διάβασα την 'Αννα Καρενίνα.
12. Σταμάτησε γιά λίγο, χαμογέλασε καί ύστερα είπε . . .
13. 'Εκλεισε τά μάτια της.
14. Χτές ξύπνησα πολύ νωρίς.
15. 'Εβαλαν τό αυτοκίνητο στό γκαράζ.
16. 'Εφυνε χθές τό πρωτό.

EXERCISE 25

1. From a place of entertainment there came (the sound of) dance music.
2. Lilika didn't understand.
3. She was looking him in the eyes.
4. As I was going to work I saw George.
5. He was singing the whole afternoon.
6. As I was running I fell down.
7. The fat man remained quiet.
8. He was talking to the girl with grey eyes.
9. The others were not talking.
10. His brain was working coolly.
11. They were not staying with them.
12. He was trying to find the child's mental level.
13. While he was going up the stairs he heard loud voices.
14. Charalambos was drinking by himself at the bar.
15. At that moment Alkis was lighting his cigarette.
16. For days the engine of his car had not been going well.
17. He found the young man fatuous.

EXERCISE 26

1. Can I go tomorrow?
2. He wanted to speak but couldn't.
3. Now you must go.
4. I can't (don't know how to) speak well, but this I want to say: we all love our work.
5. You can take a taxi.
6. Zeno began to run.
7. It isn't worth your going to Athens without seeing the Acropolis.
8. He couldn't sleep a wink.
9. What do you want to say? (what do you mean?).
10. I don't want to say anything (I don't mean anything).
11. He didn't want to lose his happiness.
12. You must leave at once.

EXERCISE 27

1. Δέ θέλω νά πάω στό σχολείο.
2. Μπορώ νά έχω ένα φλυντζάνι τσαΐ, παρακαλώ;
3. Μπορείτε νά μου δώσετε ένα ποτήρι νερό;
4. Δέν ήθελε νά πάει μαζί σας στό σινεμά.
5. Πρέπει νά διαβάσω αυτό τό βιβλίο άπόψε.
6. Άρχισε νά γελά.
7. Θέλω νά φάω σταφύλια.
8. Δέν ήθελαν νά χάσουν τά λεφτά τους.

EXERCISE 28

1. I have lost all my money.
2. Surprise had completely extinguished his anger.
3. He lost time but he had gained a good friend.
4. I haven't seen this work of art.
5. He had lit his cigarette and was waiting.

6. They had not heard the news.
7. You hadn't closed the door.
8. I have never been there in my life.

EXERCISE 29

1. Shut your (sing.) eyes.
2. Shut your (pl.) eyes.
3. Stop joking.
4. Look what I've brought.
5. Go to your work.
6. Come and see with your (own) eyes.
7. Wake up, for it's 10 o'clock.
8. Write your name.
9. Stop here.
10. Begin to sing.
11. Write these letters.
12. Go to your uncle.
13. Stay here.
14. Don't turn off the light.
15. Don't say anything.
16. Don't go away.
17. Don't go now.
18. Speak slowly, please.
19. Go upstairs.
20. Get down.

EXERCISE 30

1. Μή τρέχεις.
2. Τρέξε γρήγορα.
3. Πήγαινε σιγά.
4. Άκουε τόν πατέρα σου.
5. Κλείσε τ'αυτιά σου.

6. Ἄνοιξε τὴν πόρτα.
7. Μὴ γελᾶτε.
8. Μὴ φάγεις.
9. Πήγαινε στό σπίτι σου.
10. Γράφε.
11. Μὴ γράφεις.
12. Δέν πρέπει νά πιεῖς πολύ κρασί οἱ Νά μὴ πιεῖς πολύ κρασί.
13. Μὴ μιλάς.
14. Μὴ κοινῶς τά χέρια σου.
15. Μείνε ἐδῶ γιὰ μισή ὥρα.
16. Πίξε τὴ μπάλα.
17. Συνέχισε τὴν ἱστορία.
18. Μὴ μέ ἀφίσεις μόνο.

EXERCISE 31

1. He had a lot of money but he spent it.
2. I know you very well.
3. They call me Lilian.
4. He took him by the hand and spoke to him.
5. She was asking him about the quality.
6. My father sent me to a private school.
7. He wasn't expecting it.
8. He looked him in the eyes.
9. He put him in his place.
10. I bought a book and read it in one day.
11. He didn't believe it.
12. I have been following (or observing) you for a long time.
13. I thought you were a Russian.
14. He squeezed his hand.
15. She stayed beside him.
16. I've never seen it in my life.
17. He hadn't understood her.

18. He was trying (*lit.* searching) to find it.
19. Let me alone.
20. Tomorrow wake me early.
21. Let me go away.
22. He saw him and shouted to him.
23. Tell me the truth.
24. Don't say those things to me.
25. Can you see her?
26. Why do you tell me these things?
27. Would you like me to show you the garden?
28. They are staying with us.
29. I have known you for some time.
30. You won't do it.
31. Go, they are waiting for you.
32. They were running round him.
33. I have a good bit more to tell you.
34. I can't do it.
35. Why did you let him go away?
36. Ring me up tomorrow morning.
37. Give me three stamps.
38. I'll tell it to you.

EXERCISE 32

1. Γύρισε καὶ τὸν κοίταξε.
2. Δέ μου εἶπε τίποτε.
3. Πήγαινε μόνος σου.
4. Ἔλα δίπλα μου.
5. Φέρε μου ἓνα κομμάτι χαρτί.
6. Μέ φωνάζουν.
7. Τί σοῦ εἶπε ὁ πατέρας;
8. Τὸν ρώτησαν πολλές ἐρωτήσεις.
9. Τηλεφῶνα μου ἀπόψε.
10. Δεῖξε μου τὸν κῆπο.

11. Πρέπει πάντα νά λές τήν ἀλήθεια.
12. Δέ σέ πιστεύω.
13. Δόσε μου δυό μπουνκάλια μπύρα.
14. Δέν τόν ξέρω.
15. Δέν τόν είδαν.
16. Ὁλη ἡ οἰκογένεια σέ περιμένει.
17. Πάρε μου ἓνα ταξί.
18. Μίλα μου γι'αὐτή τήν ἐπόθεση.
19. Πῆγε κοντά τους.
20. Καλημέρα σας.

EXERCISE 33

1. I am ashamed of her.
2. Do you remember me?
3. You seem proud of it.
4. Now we are on the sixth floor.
5. He is at the office.
6. I am sorry for you.
7. He got up suddenly.
8. The girl was surprised.
9. Alec has married Vera.
10. For the first time Philip felt afraid.
11. He stood opposite him.
12. The famous party was given.
13. He found himself alone.
14. She seemed moved.
15. She was standing beside him.
16. On a lighted veranda could be seen two couples dancing.
17. He was getting ready to leave.
18. He hadn't understood her.
19. He wants to marry her.
20. I couldn't go to sleep all night long.
21. Go to sleep.

22. Think well.
23. Don't get ready.
24. Stop here.

EXERCISE 34

1. Δέ σέ θυμάμαι.
2. Δέ μπορῶ νά σκεφθῶ τώρα.
3. Φοβήθηκα πολύ.
4. Δέ σέ λυπάμαι.
5. Ἐτοιμάστηκε πολύ γρήγορα.
6. Στάθηκε κοντά μου.
7. Δέ μπορῶ νά κοιμηθῶ αὐτές τίς μέρες.
8. Μή χαθεῖς.
9. Ποῦ βρίσκεται τώρα;
10. Κοιμήσου.

EXERCISE 35

1. You are a person without will-power.
2. We are very tired.
3. They sat down round a small low table.
4. I shall come tomorrow.
5. She was sitting beside him.
6. He told him to sit down.
7. I was then nine years old.
8. He didn't know what was happening.
9. Don't sit there.
10. Let's go to the theatre.
11. Your talk was wonderful.
12. I am going to be an engineer.
13. It's mine.
14. What do you want, please?

EXERCISE 36

1. Whom do you want?
2. What do *you* think?
3. Whose is this hat?
4. I hate myself.
5. I'll give 3 drachmas to you and 3 to your brother.
6. We are not millionaires.
7. Who did I give my watch to?
8. Don't ask *us*.
9. It was I who said it.
10. I know myself.
11. Whose is this box of matches?

EXERCISE 37

1. He always had money.
2. Go over opposite and ask.
3. He put down his glass quietly on the mantelpiece.
4. I can see clearly with these spectacles.
5. He was scrutinizing him piercingly.
6. He is already fifteen years old.
7. What do you want us to do? he said suddenly.
8. He had completely forgotten her.
9. Make haste.
10. We went together but he came back.
11. Go straight on and then to the right.
12. George goes to bed late, and wakes up early in the morning.
13. He waved his hand to me, like that.

EXERCISE 38

1. **Ελα ἐδῶ γρήγορα.*
2. **Ελα πίσω τώρα.*

3. **Εφαγε καὶ ἤπιε ἀρκετά.*
4. *Καλύτερα νὰ ἔρθεις αὐριο.*
5. *Δὲν ἔχει ἔρθει.*
6. *Περπάτα πολὺ σιγά.*
7. **Ελα πάλι.*
8. *Τώρα γελάς ἀλλὰ ὅποτε θὰ κλάψεις.*
9. *Αὐριο θὰ εἶναι καλύτερα.*
10. *Τὴν κοίταζε περίεργα.*

EXERCISE 39

1. He went there usually in the afternoons.
2. New York is very far from here.
3. I am speaking to you sincerely.
4. Unfortunately I have no money with me.
5. I will come at three exactly.
6. You didn't write to us: consequently we didn't come.
7. Haris is very consistent and sincere, but he is not punctual.
8. Shakespeare is a deep writer.
9. This river is very deep.
10. Go away. Otherwise we shall send you away.
11. He spoke continuously, but I couldn't understand what he was saying.
12. I simply want you to leave me in peace.
13. I don't usually go to the cinema, but yesterday I went as an exception.

EXERCISE 40

1. He got up suddenly, pushing away the chair behind him.
2. Thank you, he said, smiling.
3. He was going (along) singing.
4. Others get merry drinking.

5. He kept talking without sense, changing the subject.
6. No, replied he, avoiding her gaze.
7. He had approached noiselessly, and was watching them, smiling.
8. He repeated the sentence, emphasizing every word.
9. He was walking along looking behind him.
10. She spoke continuously, moving her hand.

EXERCISE 41

1. *Θά πάω τρέχοντας.*
2. *Ἦρθε τραγονδώντας μέ δυνατή φωνή.*
3. *Ἔφτασε μή μπορώντας νά πεῖ λέξη.*
4. *Εἰπλωσε κάτω κοιτάζοντας τό ταβάνι.*
5. *Κάθισαν γιά λίγο μιλώντας στό διευθυντή.*
6. *Ἐφυνγαν πηγαίνοντας ἀνατολικά.*

EXERCISE 42

1. He was drunk and didn't know what he was saying.
2. Today I (*fem.*) am very glad.
3. Helen seemed moved.
4. He was dressed with much elegance.
5. She had her eyes continuously fixed upon him.
6. Mrs. Brown nodded her head with a happy smile.
7. Three men were sitting on a lighted veranda and talking.
8. All these things are whims of a spoilt child.

EXERCISE 43

1. *Γιατί εἶσαι τόσο λυπημένος;*
2. *Ἦταν τρομαγμένος.*
3. *Εἴμαστε προσκαλεσμένοι στό πάρτυ τῆς κυρίας Πετρίδη.*

4. *Δούλεψα πολύ καί εἶμαι κουρασμένος.*
5. *Δέν ξέρω τό λόγο ἀλλά εἶμαι πολύ δυστυχισμένος.*
6. *Ὁ Μίλων ἔγραψε τό "Χαμένο Παράδεισο".*
7. *Ἦταν βυθισμένος στίς σκέψεις του.*
8. *Εἶμαι θυμωμένος μαζί σου.*

EXERCISE 44

1. This seat is very far forward.
2. It is almost impossible for me to believe it.
3. His father has a fairly large (amount of) property.
4. I want a coffee, rather sweet.
5. Is it so difficult for you to do me this favour?
6. Your son's awfully intelligent.
7. This person is completely unknown to me.
8. It's very funny.
9. You are very polite.
10. This wine is even better.
11. Do you want some water? Yes, but not much.
12. This food is better than that.
13. I can't see very far.
14. I woke up very late and went to work at ten o'clock.

EXERCISE 45

1. Where do you want to go? he said to him suddenly.
2. Who will prevent me?
3. How old are you?
4. Have you come to me drunk, may I ask?
5. Which is your family?
6. What are you thinking of doing?
7. Why do you ask?
8. How is your father? Very well, thank you.
9. I wonder if he will remember me.

10. How are you? Not so bad.
11. Whose is this bicycle?

EXERCISE 46

1. *Γιατί φεύγεις τόσο νωρίς;*
2. *Τί θέλεις νά πεις;*
3. *Γιατί όχι;*
4. *Μήπως μοῦ κρύβεις τίποτε;*
5. *Τί μπορούσε νά κάνει μόνος του;*
6. *Τί ὥρα εἶναι, παρακαλῶ;*
7. *Ὡστε φεύγεις;*
8. *Μήπως νομίζεις πῶς μπορῶ νά σέ περιμένω δυό ὥρες;*
9. *Γιατί μοῦ τά λές αὐτά;*

EXERCISE 47

1. We left when the play ended.
2. He kept talking because he wanted to forget.
3. He angered him because he spoke to him sharply.
4. Now he was seeing that artists had a special value in life.
5. They went out of the room after they had turned off the light.
6. He was laughing, while secretly (within him) he was very upset.
7. Tomorrow when you are well, you thank me.
8. Don't think I'm ashamed of this.
9. He said he would come at eight.
10. The officer wasn't there but he knew all the details.
11. Don't you think we have delayed enough?
12. I've had my adventures. I think you must have heard about them.
13. I am waiting in case he comes.

14. I remained there until the train started.
15. They were happy to see him again in good health.

EXERCISE 48

1. *Πρόσεξε διτι τά φῶτα ἦταν σβυσμένα μέσα στό σπίτι.*
2. *Γιά μιὰ στιγμή φάνηκε σά νά ἤθελε νά πεῖ κάτι ἀλλά μετάνιωσε.*
3. *Τόν ἄφισε ἀφοῦ γύρισε καί τόν κοίταξε θυμωμένα.*
4. *Δέ μπορῶ νά μιλῶ καλά ἀλλά θέλω νά πῶ αὐτό.*
5. *Φεύγει ὅποτε ξερχεσαι ἐσύ.*
6. *Συνήθιζε νά μᾶς λέει νά μή καπνίζουμε ἀλλά ἐκεῖνος κάπνιζε πολύ.*
7. *Ἐμεινα ἐκεῖ ὥσπου ἤρθανε.*
8. *Καθώς περπατοῦσα στό δρόμο εἶδα κάτι ἀσυνήθιστο.*
9. *Φοβόταν μήπως τόν ἄφινε ὁ πατέρας του.*
10. *Κάνε ὅπως θέλεις.*
11. *Ἔλα, ἀνκαι δέν εἶναι πολύ ἀνάγκη.*
12. *Πήγαινε ὅπου θέλεις.*
13. *Ἦρθε μόλις τό ἄκουσε.*

EXERCISE

1. It's the Englishman who was here at the time of the occupation.
2. He came to Greece with a good bit of money that he had made in America.
3. At this moment when we are speaking, you owe your rent.
4. It was something he wasn't expecting.
5. If he stayed silent it wasn't because he had nothing to say.
6. Opposite were seen two couples dancing.

7. I saw Vassos who was enjoying the morning on the veranda.
8. He didn't want to be deprived of the wealth which had so unexpectedly come (*lit.* fallen) to him.
9. Do what you like.
10. He went to find him at John's place, which he usually frequented in the mornings.
11. I am a person who wants to give you back the happiness you have lost, the wealth that belongs to you, your family that you have not had joy in.

EXERCISE 50

1. *Αν θέλεις νά ξερθεις, έλα απόψε.
2. Από είναι τό βιβλίο πού σου έδωσα.
3. Τή στιγμή πού καθισαν ή μουσική άρχισε νά παίζει.
4. Είναι ό άνθρωπος πού μάς βοήθησε σέ μιá δύσκολη στιγμή.
5. Πήγε στό καφενείο όπου συνήθιζαν νά πηγαίνουν οί φίλοι του.
6. Είδαμε δύο γυναίκες πού συζητούσαν.

EXERCISE 51

1. I don't want either to see you or you to see me.
2. Either you go or your brother.
3. I am forced to stay at home, not only because I want to work but also because I am waiting for an important phone call.
4. In any case they will have started off at three.
5. We should have started off at three if you had come in time.
6. I should very much like to see *King Lear* tonight.
7. Shall I stay or go?

8. You ought to have written to me as soon as you got my letter.
9. You ought to have come at once.
10. He spoke to me very politely as if he didn't know me.
11. Let us sing all together.
12. He used to drink in order to forget his troubles.
13. May you win.
14. I don't like getting up very early.

EXERCISE 52

1. The time has come for the big decision.
2. My wife takes care of all household matters (*lit.* things of the house).
3. Napkin in hand he went to the window.
4. He took the photograph from Costa's hands, looked at it with care, and gave it back to him laughing.
5. He stretched himself out in the armchair where a short time before the unknown gentleman was sitting.
6. From the sea a cold wind was blowing.
7. I shall be in the library from ten in the morning till five in the afternoon.
8. Come and call for me after five.
9. He squeezed the brief-case under his arm.
10. Outside the door a taxi was waiting.
11. She looked after me like a mother.
12. I said a kind word (*lit.* good words) for you to him.
13. This man strikingly resembles my father.
14. I saw him after three years.

EXERCISE 53

1. Δέ θά μπορούσα νά κάνω τίποτε χωρίς τή βοήθειά σου.
2. *Εφτασε στό σπίτι του πολύ άργά.

3. Μοιάζει σάν ένα αστέρι τοῦ σιά.
4. Προχώρησε πρὸς τὸ μέσο τοῦ δματίου.
5. Τὸ σπίτι μου εἶναι κοντὰ στοῦ κέντρο τῆς πόλης.
6. Κατοικῶ σ'ένα διαμέρισμα μαζί μέ δυό φίλους μου.
7. Ἡ πέννα σου εἶναι πάνω στοῦ ραδιόφωνο.
8. Τά μῆλα εἶναι μέσα στοῦ καλάθι.
9. Ἀπό τίς πέντε ὡς τίς ἑφτά θά εἶμαι στοῦ σπíti.
10. Τό βλέμμα της ἔλεγε πολύ περισσότερα ἀπό τὰ λόγια της.
11. Τό αὐτοκίνητο σταμάτησε πλάι στοῦ πεζοδρόμιου.
12. Κάθισαν ὅλοι γύρω στή φωτιά.
13. Ξεκίνησαν γιά τόν Πειραιά.
14. Πῆγε στήν Ἀγγλία μέ ἀεροπλάνο.
15. Θά πάω στή Γερμανία ἀεροπορικῶς ἢ σιδηροδρομικῶς.

EXERCISE 54

1. Everybody is restless.
2. Some days are very hot and some are very cold.
3. Three hundred Spartans under Leonidas fought at Thermopylae.
4. Some gentleman came and was looking for you.
5. Most people are neither stupid nor clever.
6. He lost a thousand pounds at cards.
7. Everything at its (proper) time.
8. Many workers are without work.
9. He told me something very improbable.
10. I spent 438 pounds 12 shillings and 8 pence.
11. The last war started in 1939 and ended in 1945.

EXERCISE 55

- (a) χίλια ἑφτακόσια σαράντα τρία.
 (b) ἑξακόσια τριάντα τέσσερα.

- (c) σαρανταδύο χιλιάδες ἑφτακόσια ἑβδομήντα.
 (d) δέκα χιλιάδες πεντακόσια.
 (e) ὀχτακόσιες τριάντα ἑξί χιλιάδες ἑκατὸν εἰκοσιτέσσερα.
 (f) τετρακόσια ἑξί.
 (g) εἰκοσιτρεῖς χιλιάδες διακόσια πέντε.
 (h) ἓνα ἑκατομύριο τριακόσιες ἑβδομήντα ἑξί χιλιάδες διακόσια εἰκοσι ὀκτώ.

EXERCISE 56

Good morning.—How are you?—Very well, thanks. And you?—Yes thank you (*lit.* the same).—How's the work going? Same as usual (*lit.* quietness).—It's a pity one has to work in such wonderful weather.—I absolutely agree.—But next week we have two days off.—How's your brother? He's all right. He was asking me about you the other day.—Please give him my best regards. Good-bye.

EXERCISE 57

Next week I intend to go on a trip to Mykonos for a few days. Would you like to come with me?—I should like to very much, but I don't know if I shall be able to manage it. But I shall try, and I'll let you know tomorrow. I am very fond of the Aegean islands, and specially Mykonos.—Try and arrange to come, and we'll have a wonderful time.—I can't promise you, but I think it's almost certain that I shall come.

EXERCISE 58

Where shall we go tonight? Shall we go to the cinema, the theatre or some dance?—I think there's a good film at the

Palace. Laurence Olivier and Jean Simmons are in it.—Is it Shakespeare's *Hamlet*?—Yes, that's it.—Do you think we shall find seats easily?—Let's try, and if we don't find seats let's go to some dance. Or would you like to go and eat and drink in the Plaka?—Just as you think. I leave it to you. But ring me up at five this afternoon (and tell me) what you've decided.

EXERCISE 59

I want to go to Achilles Street, but I've forgotten the way. Please can you show me the way?—Go straight ahead, and at the third turning go left. After that take the second turning right, and you'll find yourself in Achilles Street.—Thank you very much.—If you have any difficulty, ask the policeman standing at the corner of the road.—All right. But I expect I shall find it without any difficulty.

EXERCISE 60

Can I speak to Mr. Aleko, please?—One minute, please.—Hallo?—Mr. Aleko?—Speaking.—Mr. Panos here. It's about the question of a flat which I mentioned to you the other day. Have you got one available now?—One moment and I'll have a look, Mr. Panos . . . Hallo? You're very lucky, Mr. Panos. I have just the one to suit you admirably. When can you see it?—I can see it today or tomorrow, but after six.—All right. I'll give you the address and you can go there on your own.—Thank you very much. I'm much obliged to you.—I'm obliged to you.

EXERCISE 61

Can you please tell me where I can change some English pounds?—Certainly. You should go to some tourist

agency or a bank.—Up to what time are the banks open in summer?—Till three in the afternoon. Look, down there is the Bank of Greece. There you can change all foreign currencies.—Do you know what the rate for the pound is these days?—The gold sovereign is about three hundred drachmas, and the paper pound about eighty-four.—Thank you very much for the information. Good-bye.

EXERCISE 62

Where is there a good restaurant?—In University Street.—It is dear?—Medium.—Can I have a menu, please?—Here you are, sir.—I've got some wonderful roast lamb.—Good. Bring us two portions, with salad. And some cold water.—Would you like some wine?—Yes, a bottle of retsina . . . Well, when shall we go and see the Acropolis?—Let's go this afternoon, if you like.—All right, what time?—Half past three.—Where shall we meet?—At Omonia (Concord Square), outside the Avra Hotel.—Are you staying near there?—No, I'm staying with friends at Kypseli, but it's only a few minutes by trolley-bus. Are you near Omonia?—Yes, I'm at a little hotel called the "Cleanliness".—What does it cost you?—I pay 40 drachmas for a single room with breakfast.—Are you satisfied?—On the whole. Besides, it's quite convenient for me as it's in the centre of the city.—Waiter, how much do we owe?—(Coming) at once. I will bring you the bill. 64 drachmas. Here is your change.—Thank you very much.—Did you like the meal?—Yes, it was excellent.

EXERCISE 63

On the fifteenth of August, which is (the Assumption) of Our Lady, everybody goes for an excursion, either to the sea

or the mountains. On that day they wake up very early, prepare food and drinks and put them in big baskets, with glasses, plates and knives and forks. Some go in private cars, others in buses. Since there are a lot of people, there is a great crush everywhere to find seats. Many will not go sitting but standing. But it doesn't matter, as the journey is not long.

The sea is not far away, and all those who are going to it will come across a beautiful beach. Their first task is to look round for a shady place. Of course everyone prefers a big thick pine-tree near the shore. The young ones immediately put on their bathing costumes and rush into the water. The Greek sea is enchanting, blue as the Greek sky, and as clean and clear as crystal. They swim, play games in the water and sunbathe for hours on end.

At midday some people eat in taverns. But the majority spread (a picnic) on the ground and eat the food they have brought with them. There is no lack of wine or iced beer. And the fruit in season, too, is indispensable. After the eating and drinking, they spread out their blankets and have a snooze. In the afternoon there follow more bathing and more eating and drinking; and when there is a moon they stay late in order to enjoy it. Although everybody is dog tired, the return home is accompanied by laughter and singing.

EXERCISE 64

The Pilot Nagel

Nagel Harbor, Norwegian pilot at Colombo,—When he had given clear passage to the ships—Leaving for unknown and distant ports,—Would get down into his boat serious and thoughtful,—His thick arms crossed on his chest,—Smoking an old clay pipe.—And muttering slowly to him-

self in a northern tongue,—He would leave as soon as the ships vanished from sight.

Nagel Harbor, captain of cargo vessels,—Having travelled the world around, one day—got weary and stayed as a pilot in Colombo.—But he was always thinking of his far-off country—and the islands that are full of legend, the Lofoten.—But one day he died in the pilot-boat—Suddenly, after seeing off the tanker *Fjord Folden*,—As she steamed away for the Lofoten Islands.

EXERCISE 65

Mike

They took Mike for a soldier.—He set out jauntily and happily—With Maris and Panayotis.—He couldn't even learn to slope arms—But kept muttering, Mr. Corporal,—Let me go back to my village.

Next year, in hospital,—He would stare speechless at the sky.—He fixed on some distant point—His meek nostalgic gaze,—As though he were saying, pleading,—Let me go to my home.

And Mike died a soldier.—He was seen off by some comrades,—Maris and Panayotis among them.—The hole was filled in above him,—But they left his foot sticking out.—He was a bit long, the poor chap.

EXERCISE 66

Alexandrian Kings

The Alexandrians gathered to see the children of Cleopatra—Caesarion and his younger brothers, Alexander and

Ptolemy—who for the first time were being brought out in the Gymnasium, there to be proclaimed kings amid the brilliant military parade.

Alexander they called King of Armenia, Media and the Parthians. Ptolemy they called King of Cilicia, Syria and Phoenicia. Caesarion stood in front of the others, dressed in rose-coloured silk, with a bunch of hyacinths at his breast, his belt a double row of sapphires and amethysts, his sandals tied with white ribbons with pink pearls embroidered on them. To him they gave a greater title than the younger ones: him they called the King of Kings.

The Alexandrians understood, of course, that all this was words and make-believe. But the day was warm and poetical, with the sky a pale blue; the Gymnasium of Alexandria was a triumphant masterpiece of art; the gorgeous dress of the courtiers something wonderful; and Caesarion was all charm and beauty (son of Cleopatra, blood of the Lagidae). So the Alexandrians came crowding to the festival, and they were enthusiastic and cheered in Greek and Egyptian (and some in Hebrew), delighted with the beautiful spectacle—though of course they knew what it was all really worth, what empty words those kingdoms were.

VOCABULARY

GREEK-ENGLISH

A

- ἡ Ἀθήνα, Athens
 ἀθόρυβα, noiselessly
 τό Αἰγαῖο, Aegean
 τό αἷμα, blood
 ἀκόμα, still, yet, even
 ἀκολουθῶ, I follow
 ἀκοῦω, I hear (cf. *acoustic*)
 ἀκριβής, exact
 ἀκριβός, dear
 ἡ Ἀκρόπολις, Acropolis
 ἀλλά, but
 ἀλλάζω, I change
 ἀλλιῶς, otherwise
 ἄλλος, other, different
 ὁ ἄλλος, the other
 ἄλλοτε, formerly
 ἄλλου, elsewhere
 ἄλλωστε, besides
 τό ἀμάξι, car, cab, cart
 ἡ Ἀμερική, America
 ἀμέσως, at once
 ἡ ἄμμουδιά, sandy beach
 ἀνάβω, I light
 ἡ ἀνάγκη, need
 ἡ Ἀνατολή, East
 ἀνατολικά, to the east
 ἀναφέρω, I mention
 ἀνεβαίνω, I go up
 ἀνήκω, I belong
 ἀνήσυχος, uneasy
 ὁ ἄνθρωπος, man, person
 ἄνκαι, although, even if
- ἀνόητος, silly
 ἀνοιχτός, open
 ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, I understand, perceive
 ἀντίο, good-bye
 ὁ ἄντρας, man, husband
 ἡ ἀξία, value
 ἀξίζει, it is worth
 ὁ ἀξιωματικός, officer
 ἀπαντῶ, I answer
 ἀπαραίτητος, indispensable
 ἀπέναντι, opposite
 ἀπέχει, it is distant
 ἀπίθανος, unlikely
 ἀπλός, simple, plain
 ἀπλώνω, I spread
 ἀπό, from, by
 τό ἀπόγευμα, afternoon
 ἀπολαμβάνω, I enjoy
 ἀπτόμα, abruptly
 ἀπόψε, tonight
 ἀποφασίζω, I decide
 ἡ ἀπόφασις, decision
 ἀποφεύγω, I avoid
 ἀποχτῶ, I get, acquire
 ἀπροσδόκητα, unexpectedly
 ἄραγε, (particle introducing question)
 ἀργά, late, slowly
 ἀριστερός, left
 ἄρκετός, enough
 τό ἀρνάκι, lamb
 ἀρχίζω, I begin
 τό ἀστεῖο, joke

ἀστεῖος, funny
 τό ἀστέρρι, star
 ὁ ἀστυφύλακας, policeman
 ἄσχημος, bad, ugly
 ὁ Αὐγουστος, August
 αὐριο, tomorrow
 τό αὐτοκίνητο, motor-car
 αὐτός, he, this
 ἀφίνω, I let, leave
 ἀφού, since, after
 ὁ Ἀχιλλεύς, Achilles

B

βάζω, I put
 βαθύς, deep
 ἡ βάρκα, boat
 βαρύς, heavy
 τά βάσανα, troubles
 ἡ βασιλεία, kingdom
 ὁ βασιλιάς, king
 βγαίνω, I go out
 βέβαια, surely, of course
 βέβαιος, sure
 ἡ βεράντα, veranda
 τό βιβλίον, book (cf. Bible)
 ἡ βιβλιοθήκη, library
 ὁ βλάκας, stupid person
 τό βλέμμα, look
 βλέπω, I see
 ἡ βοήθεια, help, aid
 βοηθῶ, I help
 βολικός, convenient
 βορρικός, northern (cf. Aurora Borealis)
 τό βουνό, mountain
 βολσκω, I find
 βυθίζω, I sink, immerse

Γ

γαλάζιος, blue
 ἡ Γαλλία, France (cf. Gaul)

γεια σου, your health! good-bye!
 τό γέλιο, laughter
 γελῶ, I laugh
 γεμᾶτος, full
 ἡ Γερμανία, Germany
 γερός, strong and healthy
 γιά, for, about
 γιά νά, in order to
 ὁ γιालός, sea, shore
 γιατί, why? because
 γίνομαι, I become
 τό γκαράζ, garage
 τό γκαρσόν, waiter
 γκριζός, grey
 γλυκός, sweet (cf. glucose)
 ἡ γλώσσα, tongue (cf. glossary)
 γνωρίζω, I know (cf. agnostic)
 γοητευμένος, charmed
 τό γράμμα, letter
 τό γραμματόσημο, postage-stamp
 τό γραφεῖο, office
 γράφω, I write (cf. graph)
 γρήγορος, quick

τά γυαλιά, spectacles
 ὁ γυιός, son
 τό γυμνάσιο, gymnasium, grammar school
 ἡ γυναίκα, woman, wife (cf. gynaecologist)
 γυρεύω, I look for
 γυρίζω, I turn, return (cf. gyro)
 ὁ γυρισμός, return
 γύρω, round
 ἡ γωνία, corner (cf. trigonometry)

Δ

τά δάκρυα, tears
 δείχνω, I show, point at
 δέκα, ten (cf. decade)
 ὁ δεκανέας, corporal

δεκατρεῖς, thirteen
 δεμένος, tied
 δέν, negative particle
 τό δέντρο, tree (cf. rhododendron)
 δεξιά, to the right
 ἡ Δευτέρα, Monday
 δεύτερος, second (cf. Deuteronomy)
 διαβάζω, I read
 ἡ διαδρομή, trip
 διαθέσιμος, available
 διακόσια, two hundred
 τό διαμέρισμα, apartment, flat
 διαπεραστικός, piercing
 διαρκῶς, continually
 διάφανος, transparent (cf. diaphanous)
 διάφοροι, different, various
 ἡ διεύθυνσις, address
 ὁ διευθυντής, director
 δικός μου, mine
 δίνω, I give
 δίπλα, beside, next (to)
 διπλός, double
 δοκιμάζω, I try, sample
 ἡ δουλειά, work
 δουλεύω, I work
 ἡ δραχμή, drachma
 ὁ δρόμος, road, street, way (cf. -drome)
 δροσερός, cool
 δυνατός, strong (cf. dynamic)
 δύο, two
 δύσκολο, I find it difficult
 δύσκολος, difficult
 δυστυχισμένος, unhappy
 δώδεκα, twelve
 τό δωμάτιο, room (cf. dome)

Ε

ὁ εαυτός μου, myself
 ἡ εβδομάδα, week (cf. hebdomadal)

ἐβδομήντα, seventy
 ἑβδομος, seventh
 ἑβραϊκά, Hebrew
 ἐγώ, I (cf. egoist)
 ἐδῶ, here
 εἴκοσι, twenty
 εἰκοστός, twentieth
 εἰλικρινής, sincere
 εἶμαι, I am
 εἴτε . . . εἴτε, either . . . or
 ἑκατό, a hundred (cf. hecatomb)
 τό ἑκατομύριο, million
 ὁ ἑκατομμυριούχος, millionaire
 ἑκατοστός, hundredth
 ἡ ἐκδρομή, excursion, outing
 ἐκεῖ, there
 ἑκεῖνος, that, the other
 ἡ ἐκπληξίς, surprise
 ἑκτακτος, excellent
 ἑκτος, sixth
 ἡ Ἑλλάδα, Greece (cf. Hellas)
 ἑλληνικά, Greek
 ἡμεῖς, we
 ἡ ἑμορφιά, beauty
 ἐμποδίζω, I prevent
 ἐμπρός, in front
 ἐμπροστί, in front
 ἕνας, one, a
 ἑνατος, ninth
 ἐνενηντα, ninety
 ἐνθουσιάζομαι, I get excited
 ἐνιακόσια, nine hundred
 ἐννιά, nine
 ἑντεκα, eleven
 ἐντελῶς, completely
 ἐνῶ, while
 ἑξακόσια, six hundred
 ἐξαργυρώνω, I cash
 ἐξετάζω, I examine
 ἐξήντα, sixty
 ἑξί, six

έξυπνος, intelligent, clever
 έξω, out, outside (cf. *exotic*)
 ἡ ἐορτή, holiday, festivity
 ἔπενφημῶ, I cheer
 τό ἐπίπεδο, level
 ἐπόμενος, following
 ἡ ἐποχή, season (cf. *epoch*)
 ἐπ' ὤμου, slope arms
 ὁ ἐργάτης, worker
 τό ἔργο, work (artistic)
 ἐρχόμενος, coming, next
 ἡ ἐρώτησις, question
 εἶς, you
 τό ἐστιατόριο, restaurant
 ἐτοιμάζομαι, I get ready
 ἐτοιμος, ready
 ἔτσι, so, thus
 ἡ εὐγένεια, politeness
 εὐγενής, polite, noble (cf. *eugenic*)
 εὐθυμος, merry, cheerful
 εὐκολος, easy
 εὐτυχής, happy
 εὐτυχία, happiness
 εὐτυχισμένος, happy
 εὐχαριστημένος, pleased
 εὐχάριστος, pleasant
 εὐχαριστῶ, I thank (cf. *Eucharist*)
 ἑφτά, seven
 ἑφτακόσια, seven hundred
 ἔχω, I have

Z

ζεστός, hot, warm (cf. *zest*)
 τό ζευγάρι, couple, pair
 τό ζήτημα, question, problem
 ζητῶ, I ask for, look for
 ἡ ζωή, life (cf. *zoology*)
 ἡ ζώνη, belt (cf. *zone*)
 ζῶ, I live

H

ἦ, or
 ἡ ἡλιοθεραπεία, sunbathing
 ὁ ἥλιος, sun (cf. *helio-*)
 ἡ ἡσυχία, quiet
 ἡσυχος, quiet

Θ

ἡ θάλασσα, sea
 θαλασσίος, sea (adj.)
 τό θάρρος, courage
 θαρρῶ, I think
 τό θαῦμα, miracle
 θαυμάσιος, wonderful
 τό θέαμα, spectacle
 θεατρικός, theatrical
 τό θέατρο, theatre
 ἡ θεία, aunt
 ὁ θεῖος, uncle
 ἡ θέλησις, will
 θέλω, I want
 τό θέμα, subject (cf. *theme*)
 οἱ Θερμοπύλεις, Thermopylae
 ἡ θέση, position, seat
 ἡ Θεσσαλονίκη, Salonica
 θριαμβικός, triumphal
 ὁ θρύλος, legend
 θυμᾶμαι, I remember
 ὁ θυμός, anger
 θυμῶν, I get angry, anger

I

ἰδιαίτερος, special
 ἴδιος, same
 ἡ ἰδιωτεία, whim
 ἰδιωτικός, private (cf. *idiotic*)
 ἴσια, straight on
 ἴσος, equal (cf. *isotope*)
 ἴσως, perhaps

ἡ ἱστορία, history, story
 ἡ Ἰταλία, Italy

K

ἡ καθαριότης, cleanliness
 καθαρός, clean (cf. *cathartic*)
 κάθε, every
 τά καθέκαστα, particulars
 καθιστός, sitting
 κάθουμαι, I sit
 καθώς, as
 και, and, even
 καινούριος, new
 ὁ καιρός, weather, time
 κακός, bad (cf. *cacophony*)
 τό καλάθι, basket
 καλημέρα, good morning
 καληνύχτα, good night
 ὁ καλλιτέχνης, artist
 τό καλοκαίρι, summer
 καλός, good, nice (cf. *calligraphy*)
 καμαρωτός, jaunty
 τό καμπαρέ, night-club
 κάμποσος, a lot
 καν, at all
 κανένας, no one, anyone
 κανονίζω, I arrange (cf. *canon*)
 κανονικός, regular
 κάνω, I do, make
 τό καπέλλο, hat
 καπνίζω, I smoke
 κάποιος, someone
 κάποτε, sometime(s), then
 τό καράβι, ship
 ἡ καρδιά, heart (cf. *cardiac*)
 ἡ καρέκλα, chair
 καρφῶνω, I nail, fix
 καταλαβαίνω, I understand
 ὁ κατάλογος, list
 κατὰμαυρος, jet black

καταπληκτικός, amazing
 καταφέρνω, I succeed
 κατεβαίνω, I go down
 κάτι, something
 κατοικῶ, I live
 τό κατορθώμα, feat
 ἡ κατοχή, occupation
 κάτω, down
 τό καφενεῖο, café
 ὁ καφές, coffee
 κεντημένος, embroidered
 τό κέντρο, centre, place of refreshment
 τό κεφάλι, head (cf. *-cephalic*)
 ὁ κήπος, garden
 κηρύττω, I proclaim, declare
 κιάλας, already
 κλαῶ, I cry, weep
 κλείω, I close
 κοιμᾶμαι, I sleep
 κοιτάζω, I look at
 κολυμπῶ, I swim
 τό κομμάτι, piece
 ἡ κομψότητα, smartness
 κοντά, near
 ἡ κοπέλλα, girl
 ἡ κορδέλλα, ribbon
 τό κορίτσι, girl
 ὁ κόσμος, world, people
 ἡ κουβέντα, conversation
 ἡ κουβέρτα, blanket
 ἡ κουζίνα, kitchen
 κουνῶ, I move
 κουράζομαι, I get tired
 ἡ κούραση, fatigue
 κουρασμένος, tired
 τό κουτί, box
 κούφιος, empty, hollow
 τό κρασί, wine
 κρατημένος, reserved
 ἡ κρεβατοκάμαρα, bedroom
 τό κρέμα, pity

κρύβομαι, I hide
κρύος, cold
τό κρύσταλλο, ice, icicle, crystal
ή Κύπρος, Cyprus
κύρ, mister (familiar)
ή κυρία, Mrs., lady
ή Κυριακή, Sunday
ό κύριος, Mr., gentleman

Λ

ό λάκκος, hole, pit
λέγω, I say
λείπω, I am away, am lacking
ή λέξις, word (cf. *lexicon*)
τό λεπτό, minute
λεπτός, thin, delicate
ή Λευκασία, Nicosia
τά λεφτά, money
τό λεωφορείο, bus
λησμονώ, I forget
λίγο, a little
λίγος, a little, some
ό λιμένας, harbour
ή λίρα, pound sterling
ό λογαριασμός, bill
ό λόγος, speech, reason (cf. *zoology*)
τό Λονδίνο, London
λυπᾶμαι, I am sorry
λυπημένος, sad

Μ

μά, but
μαγευτικός, charming, delightful (cf. *magic*)
τό μαγιό, bathing costume
μαζεύω, I gather
μαζί, together
μαθαίνω, I learn (cf. *polymath*)

τό μάθημα, lesson
ό μαθητής, pupil
μακάρι, (particle introducing wish)
μακρινός, distant
μακριά, far
μακρός, long
τά μαλλιά, hair
μᾶλλον, rather
ή μάνα, mother
τό μαργαριτάρι, pearl
τά μάτια, eyes
μαύρος, black (cf. *Moor*)
τά μαχαροπήρουνα, knives and forks
μέ, with
μεγάλος, big, great (cf. *mega-*)
μεθώ, I get drunk (cf. *methylated*)
μένω, I stay
ή μέρα, day (cf. *ephemeral*)
ή μερίδα, portion
μερικοί, some
μέσα, in, inside
τό μεσημέρι, noon
τό μέσο, middle
μετά, after
τό μετάξι, silk
τό μήλο, apple
μήπως, (particle introducing question)
ή μητέρα, mother
ή μηχανή, engine, machine
ή μηχανική, engineering
ό μηχανικός, engineer, mechanic
μιά, μία, one, a
μικρός, small (cf. *micro-*)
μιλώ, I speak, talk
μισός, half
μοιάζω, I resemble
μόλις, as soon as, just
μολονότι, although

μόνο, only
μονολογώ, I talk to myself
μόνος, alone, only
μονός, single
μουρμουρίζω, I murmur
ή μουσική, music
ή μπάλα, ball
τό μπάνιο, bath
τό μπάρ, bar
μπλέ, blue
μπορώ, I can
τό μπουκάλι, bottle
τό μπράτσο, arm
μπροστά, in front
ή μπίρα, beer
τό μυαλό, brain
ή Μύκονος, Mykonos

Ν

νά (verbal particle)
ναί, yes
τά νέα, news
ή Νεάπολις, Naples
ό νεαρός, youth
ή Νέα Υόρκη, New York
νέος, young, new
τό νερό, water
τό νησί, island
νικώ, I win, beat
νιώθω, I feel
τό νοίκι, rent
νομίζω, I think
ό Νορβηγός, Norwegian
τό νοσοκομείο, hospital
νοσταλγικός, nostalgic
ντρέπομαι, I am ashamed, I am shy
ντύνομαι, I get dressed
ή νύχτα, night
νωρίς, early

Ξ

ξαναβλέπω, I see again
ξαναδίνω, I give back, I give again
ξανθός, fair, blond
ξαπλώνω, I lie down
ξάφνου, suddenly
ξεκινώ, I set off
τό ξενοδοχείο, hotel
ό ξένος, stranger, guest (cf. *xenophobia*)
ξεπροβοδίζω, I see off
ξέρω, I know
ξεχνώ, I forget
ξοδεύω, I spend
ξυπνῶ, I wake up

Ο

ογδόντα, eighty
ογδοος, eighth
ή οδός, street
ή οικογένεια, family
οκτώ, eight
όλακρος, whole
όλο, all the time
όλούσια, straight on
όλόκληρος, whole
όλος, all
όλοτελα, completely
ή όμιλία, talk (cf. *homily*)
όμως, but, nevertheless
τό όνομα, name
όποτε, whenever
όπου, where, wherever
όπως, as, like
όπωςήποτε, in any case, without fail
όρθιος, standing
ό ορίζοντας, horizon
όρίστε, here you are

ἡ ὀροφή, roof
 ὅσο, as much as
 ὅτι, that
 ὅ, τι, what
 ὁ οὐρανός, sky (cf. *Uranus*)
 ὅτε . . . ὅτε, neither . . . nor
 ὄχι, no, not
 ὀχτακόσια, eight hundred

Π

παγωμένος, frozen, ice-cold
 τό παιδί, child (cf. *pediatry*)
 παίζω, I play
 παίρνω, I take
 τό παιχνίδι, game, toy
 τό πακέτο, packet
 πάλι, again
 παλιός, old
 τό παλτό, overcoat
 ἡ Παναγία, Virgin Mary
 τό Πανεπιστήμιο, University
 πάντα, always
 πάντοτε, always
 παντρεύομαι, I marry
 πάνω, up
 πάρα πολύ, very much
 ὁ παράδεισος, paradise
 τό παράθυρο, window
 παρακαλῶ, I request
 παρακολουθῶ, I attend
 παραξενεύομαι, I am taken
 aback
 παράξενος, strange
 ἡ Παρασκευή, Friday
 ἡ παράταξη, parade
 παραιτῶ, I abandon
 τό πάρτυ, party
 ἡ πατάτα, potato
 ὁ πατέρας, father
 τό πάτωμα, floor
 τό πεζοδρόμιο, pavement

πεθαίνω, I die
 πειράζει, it matters
 ἡ Πέμπτη, Thursday
 πέμπτος, fifth
 πενήντα, fifty
 ἡ πέννα, pen, penny
 πεντακόσια, five hundred
 πέντε, five
 πέρα, beyond
 περίεργος, curious
 περιμένω, I wait (for)
 ἡ περιουσία, property
 ἡ περιπέτεια, adventure
 περιποιῶμαι, I look after
 περίπου, about
 περισσότερος, more
 περήφανος, proud
 περίφημος, famous
 περνῶ, I pass
 περπατῶ, I walk
 ἡ πετσέτα, towel, napkin
 πέρω, I fall
 τό πεύκο, pine-tree
 πηγαίνω, I go
 τό πιάνο, piano
 πιάνω, I take hold of
 τό πιάτο, plate
 ἡ πιλοτίνα, pilot-boat
 ὁ πιλότος, pilot
 πίνω, I drink
 πιό, more
 πιότερο, more
 τό πιστό, drink
 πιστεύω, I believe
 πίσω, behind
 πλάι, beside
 πλατύς, wide (cf. *platypus*)
 πληρέστατα, completely
 ἡ πληροφορία, information
 πληρώνω, I pay
 πληροφορίζω, I approach
 ὁ πλοίαρχος, captain

τό πλοίο, ship
 πλούσιος, rich
 ὁ πλούτος, wealth
 πνευματικός, mental, spiritual
 τό ποδάρι, foot
 τά ποδήματα, shoes
 τό πόδι, foot, leg
 ποιητικός, poetic
 ποιος; who?
 ἡ ποιότητα, quality
 ὁ πόλεμος, war (cf. *polemic*)
 πολεμῶ, I fight
 ἡ πόλις, city, town
 πολλοί, many
 ἡ πολυθρόνα, armchair
 πολός, much (cf. *poly-*)
 ἡ πολυτέλεια, luxury
 ἡ πορεία, course
 ἡ πόρτα, door
 πόσος; how much?
 τό ποτάμι, river
 πότε; when?
 ποτέ, never, ever
 τό ποτήρι, glass
 πού; where?
 πού, that
 τό πράγμα, thing (cf. *pragmatic*)
 τό πρακτορεῖο, agency
 πρᾶος, meek
 πράσινος, green
 πρέπει, it is necessary
 πρῶν, before
 τίς προάλλες, the other day
 τό πρόγευμα, breakfast
 πρὸς, towards
 προσέχω, I pay attention
 προσκαλῶ, I invite
 ἡ προσοχή, attention
 προσπαθῶ, I try
 τό πρόσωπο, face
 ἡ πρόταση, suggestion, sentence
 προτιμῶ, I prefer

προχωρῶ, I proceed
 τό πρωινό, breakfast, morning
 πρωτός, first
 πυκνός, thick
 πῶς; how?
 πῶς, that

Ρ

τό ραδιόφωνο, radio
 τά ρέστα, change
 ἡ ρετσίνα, retsina (kind of wine)
 εἶχνω, I throw
 ροδόχρους, rose-coloured
 τό ρολόι, clock, watch
 ὁ Ρώσος, Russian
 ρωτῶ, I ask, inquire

Σ

σά, like
 τό Σάββατο, Saturday
 ἡ σαλάτα, salad
 τό σαλόνι, living room
 ὁ σάπφειρος, sapphire
 σαράντα, forty
 σαχλός, inane, daft
 σβῶνω, I rub off
 σέ, to
 ἡ σειρά, row, series
 τό σελίνι, shilling
 σηκώνομαι, I get up
 ἡ σημασία, meaning, import-
 ance (cf. *semantic*)
 τό σημείο, point
 σήμερα, today
 σιγά, slowly
 σιδηροδρομικῶς, by train
 τό σινεμά, cinema
 σιωπηλός, silent
 ἡ σκάλα, staircase
 σκεπάζω, I cover

σκέφτομαι, I think
 ή σκέψη, thought
 σκιερός, shady
 σκληρός, cruel, hard
 σκοπεύω, I intend
 σοβαρός, serious
 ο Σπαρτιάτης, Spartan
 τό σπύρτο, match
 τό σπίτι, house, home
 σπουδαίος, important
 σταματώ, I stop
 τά σταφύλια, grapes
 στανρωμένος, crucified
 στέκομαι, I stand
 στέλλω, I send
 στενοχωρημένος, worried
 στερούμαι, I lack
 τό στήθος, breast
 ή στιγμή, moment
 στοιχίζω, I cost
 ο στρατιώτης, soldier
 στρίβω, I turn
 τό στρίψιμο, turning
 στρώνω, I spread
 ο συγγραφέας, author
 ή συγκέντρωση, meeting
 συγκινημένος, moved
 συγκινητικός, moving
 συζητώ, I discuss, argue
 συλλογίζομαι, I ponder
 συμφωνώ, I agree
 συναντιέμαι, I meet
 ή συνέπεια, consequence
 συνεπής, consistent
 συνεχίζω, I continue
 συνήθως, usually
 συνοδεύω, I accompany
 ο συνωστισμός, crowding
 συχνά, often
 συχνάζω, I frequent
 σφίγγω, I squeeze
 σχεδόν, almost

τό σχολείο, school
 σωστός, correct, whole

T

ή ταβέρνα, tavern, pub
 ή τάξη, class
 τό ταξί, taxi
 τό ταξίδι, journey
 τέλειος, perfect
 τελειώνω, I finish
 τελείως, completely
 τελευταίος, last
 τό τέλος, end
 τέσσερεις, four
 ή Τετάρτη, Wednesday
 τό τέταρτο, quarter
 τέταρτος, fourth
 τετρακόσιοι, four hundred
 ή τέχνη, art (cf. technique)
 τό τζάκι, hearth, fireplace
 ή τηλεόρασις, television
 τό τηλέφωνο, telephone
 τηλεφωνώ, I telephone
 τί; what?
 τινάζω, I push away
 τίποτε, nothing, anything
 τονίζω, I stress (cf. tone)
 τόσο, so
 τότε, then
 τουριστικός, tourist (adj.)
 τό τραγούδι, song
 τραγουδώ, I sing
 τό τραίνο, train
 ή τράπεζα, bank
 τό τραπέζι, small table
 τό τραπέζι, table
 τρεις, three
 τρέχω, I run
 τριακόσιοι, three hundred
 τριάντα, thirty
 τριανταφυλλίς, rose-coloured

ή Τρίτη, Tuesday
 τρίτος, third
 τό τρολλεϋ, trolley-bus
 τρομάζω, I get frightened
 τρομερά, awfully
 τρώγω, I eat
 τό τσάι, tea
 ή τσάντα, handbag
 τό τσιγάρο, cigarette
 τό τσιμπούκι, pipe
 τυχερός, lucky
 τώρα, now

Y

ο ύάκινθος, hyacinth
 ύπεροχος, excellent
 ο ύπνος, sleep
 ή ύπόθεσις, case, matter
 ύπόσχομαι, I promise
 ύπόχρεος, obliged
 ύποχρεωμένος, forced
 ύστερα, after

Φ

τό φαγητό, food, meal
 τό φαγοπότι, eating and drink-
 ing
 τό φαί, food, meal
 φαίνομαι, appear, seem
 ο φαντάρος, soldier
 τό φεγγάρι, moon
 φέρω, I bring
 φεύγω, I go away
 τό φθινόπωρο, autumn
 τό φιλμ, film
 ο φίλος, friend (cf. phil-)
 ο φιλόσοφος, philosopher
 τό φλυντζάνι, cup
 φοβάμαι, I am afraid

ή φορά, time
 φορτηγός, cargo (adj.)
 ο φουκαράκος, poor chap
 ο φούρνος, oven, furnace
 φροντίζω, I take care
 τό φρούτο, fruit
 φτάνω, I reach
 φτωχός, poor
 φυσικά, naturally
 φυσώ, I blow
 φωνάζω, I cry
 ή φωνή, voice (cf. phonetic)
 τό φώς, light
 ή φωτιά, fire
 φωτισμένος, lighted
 ή φωτογραφία, photograph

X

χαϊδεμένος, pampered
 χαϊδεύω, pamper, caress
 ο χαιρετισμός, greeting
 χαίρομαι, I am glad
 χαλώ, I spoil, demolish,
 change
 χαμένος, lost
 χαμηλός, low
 τό χαμόγελο, smile
 χαμογελώ, I smile
 χάμω, on the ground
 χάνω, I lose
 ή χαρά, joy
 ή χάρη, grace, charm
 χαρούμενος, joyful
 τό χαρτί, paper
 τά χαρτιά, cards
 χαρτινός, paper (adj.)
 τό χαρτονόμισμα, currency note
 τά χείλη, lips
 χειρότερος, worse
 τό χέρι, hand, arm
 χθές, yesterday

χίλια, a thousand
 χοντροός, fat, thick
 χορεύω, I dance
 ό χορός, dance, chorus
 τά χρήματα, money
 χρήσιμος, useful
 ό χρόνος, year, time (cf. *chronology*)
 χρυσός, gold
 τό χρώμα, colour (cf. *chrome*)
 χρωστώ, I owe
 χωμάτινος, earthen
 ή χώρα, country
 τό χωριό, village
 χωρίς, without

Ψ

ψάχνω, I search
 τό ψέμα, lie (cf. *pseudo-*)
 ψηλός, tall
 ψητός, baked, roast
 ψόφιος, lifeless
 ψυχρός, cold

Ω

ή ώρα, hour, time
 ωραίος, beautiful
 ώς, till, up to
 ώσπον, till
 ώστε, so that

ENGLISH-GREEK

A

a, an, ένας
 I abandon, παραιτώ
 about, γιά, περίπου
 abruptly, απότομα
 I accompany, συνοδεύω
 I acquire, αποκτώ
 address, ή διεύθυνσις
 adventure, ή περιπέτεια
 afraid, I am, φοβάμαι
 after, μετά, ύστερα
 afternoon, τό απόγευμα
 again, πάλι, ξανά
 agency, τό πρακτορείο
 I agree, συμφωνώ
 aid, ή βοήθεια
 all, όλος
 almost, σχεδόν
 alone, μόνος
 already, κιόλας
 although, άν και, μολοντί
 always, πάντα, πάντοτε
 I am, είμαι
 amazing, καταπληκτικός
 and, και
 anger, ό θυμός
 I answer, απαντώ
 anyone, κάποιος, κανένας
 anything, κάτι, τίποτε
 apartment, τό διαμέρισμα
 I appear, φαίνομαι
 apple, τό μήλο
 I approach, πλησιάζω
 I argue, συζητώ
 arm, τό μπράτσο, τό χέρι
 armchair, ή πολυθρόνα

art, ή τέχνη
 artist, ό καλλιτέχνης
 as, καθώς, όπως
 as much as, όσο
 as soon as, μόλις
 ashamed, I am, ντρέπομαι
 I ask, ρωτώ
 I ask for, ζητώ
 at once, άμέσως
 Athens, ή Αθήνα
 I attend, παρακολουθώ
 attention, ή προσοχή
 aunt, ή θεία
 author, ό συγγραφέας
 autumn, τό φθινόπωρο
 available, διαθέσιμος
 I avoid, αποφεύγω
 away, I am, λείπω
 awfully, τρομερά

B

bad, κακός, άσχημος
 ball, ή μπάλα
 bank, ή τράπεζα
 bar, τό μπαρ
 basket, τό καλάθι
 bath, τό μπάνιο
 bathing costume, τό μαγιό
 beautiful, όραιο
 beauty, ή έμορφιά
 because, γιατί
 I become, γίνομαι
 bedroom, ή κρεββατοκάμαρα
 beer, ή μύρα
 before, πριν
 I begin, αρχίζω

- behind, πίσω
 I believe, πιστεύω
 I belong, ανήκω
 belt, ή ζώνη
 beside, δίπλα, πλάι
 besides, άλλωστε
 beyond, πέρα
 big, μεγάλος
 bill, ό λογαριασμός
 black, μαύρος
 blanket, ή κουβέρτα
 blond, ξανθός
 blood, τό αίμα
 I blow, φυσώ
 blue, γαλάζιος, μπλέ
 boat, ή βάρκα
 book, τό βιβλίο
 bottle, τό μπουκάλι
 box, τό κουτί
 brain, τό μυαλό
 breakfast, τό πρόγευμα, τό πρωινό
 breast, τό στήθος
 I bring, φέρω
 bus, τό λεωφορείο
 but, αλλά, μά, όμως
 by, κοντά, μέ
 by train, σιδηροδρομικώς

C

- café, τό καφεείο
 I can, μπορώ
 captain, ό πλοίαρχος
 car, τό αυτοκίνητο, τό άμάξι
 cards, τά χαρτιά
 I caress, χαϊδεύω
 I cash, εξαργυρώνω
 centre, τό κέντρο
 cheerful, εύθυμος
 chair, ή καρέκλα
 I change, αλλάζω, χαλώ

- change, τά ρέστα
 charm, ή χάρη
 charmed, γοητευμένος
 charming, μαγευτικός
 child, τό παιδί
 cigarette, τό τσιγάρο
 cinema, τό σινεμά
 city, ή πόλις
 class, ή τάξη
 clean, καθαρός
 cleanliness, ή καθαριότητα
 clever, έξυπνος
 clock, τό ρολόι
 I close, κλείω
 coffee, ό καφές
 cold, κρύος, ψυχρός
 colour, τό χρώμα
 completely, έντελώς
 consequence, ή συνέπεια
 consistent, συνεπής
 I continue, συνεχίζω
 continually, διαρκώς
 convenient, βολικός
 conversation, ή κουβέντα
 cool, όροσερός
 corner, ή γωνιά
 corporal, ό δεκανέας
 correct, σωστός
 I cost, στοιχίζω
 country, ή χώρα
 couple, τό ζευγάρι
 courage, τό θάρρος
 course, ή πορεία
 I cover, σκεπάζω
 crowding, ό συνωστισμός
 cruel, σκληρός
 I cry, κλαίω, φωνάζω
 crystal, τό κρύσταλλο
 cup, τό φλυντζάνι
 curious, περίεργος
 currency note, τό χαρτονόμισμα
 Cyprus, ή Κύπρος

D

- dance, ό χορός
 I dance, χορεύω
 day, ή μέρα
 dear, άκριβός
 I decide, αποφασίζω
 decision, ή απόφασις
 deep, βαθύς
 delicate, λεπτός
 I demolish, χαλώ
 I die, πεθαίνω
 different, διάφορος
 difficult, δύσκολος
 director, ό διευθυντής
 I discuss, συζητώ
 distant, μακρινός
 distant, it is, απέχει
 I do, κάνω
 door, ή πόρτα
 double, διπλός
 down, κάτω
 I drink, πίνω

E

- early, νωρίς
 east, ή άνατολή
 easy, εύκολος
 I eat, τρώγω
 eight, οκτώ
 eight hundred, όχτακόσια
 eighty, ογδόντα
 either . . . or, είτε . . . είτε
 eleven, έντεκα
 elsewhere, άλλού
 end, τό τέλος
 engine, ή μηχανή
 engineer, ό μηχανικός
 engineering, ή μηχανική
 I enjoy, απολαμβάνω
 enough, άρκετός

- equal, ίσος
 even, άκόμα
 even if, άνκαι
 ever, ποτέ
 every, κάθε
 eyes, τά μάτια
 exact, άκριβής
 I examine, εξετάζω
 excellent, έκτακτος, ύπέροχος
 excursion, ή έκδρομή

F

- face, τό πρόσωπο
 fair, ξανθός
 I fall, πέφτω
 family, ή οικογένεια
 famous, περίφημος
 far, μακριά
 fat, χοντρός
 father, ό πατέρας
 fatigue, ή κόπωση
 feat, τό κατόρθωμα
 I feel, νιώθω
 fifty, πενήντα
 I fight, πολεμώ
 film, τό φίλμ
 I finish, τελειώνω
 I find, βρίσκω
 I find it difficult, δυσκολεύομαι
 fire, ή φωτιά
 first, πρώτος
 five, πέντε
 five hundred, πεντακόσια
 flat, τό διαμέρισμα
 floor, τό πάτωμα
 follow, άκολουθώ
 following, επόμενος
 food, τό φαγητό, τό φαί
 foot, τό πόδι
 for, για
 forced, υποχρεωμένος

I forget, λησμονῶ, ξεχνῶ
 formerly, ἄλλοτε
 forty, σαράντα
 four, τέσσερες
 four hundred, τετρακόσιοι
 France, ἡ Γαλλία
 I frequent, συχνάζω
 Friday, ἡ Παρασκευή
 friend, ὁ φίλος
 from, ἀπό
 frozen, παγωμένος
 fruit, τό φρούτο
 full, γεμάτος
 funny, ἀστεῖος
 furnace, ὁ φούρνος

G

game, τό παιχνίδι
 garage, τό γκαράζ
 garden, ὁ κήπος
 I gather, μαζεύω
 gentleman, ὁ κύριος
 Germany, ἡ Γερμανία
 I get angry, θυμῶνω
 I get dressed, ντύνομαι
 I get frightened, τρομάζω
 I get ready, ἐτοιμάζομαι
 I get tired, κουράζομαι
 I get up, σηκώνομαι
 girl, τό κορίτσι, ἡ κοπέλλα
 I give, δίνω
 glad, I am, χαίρομαι
 glass, τό ποτήρι
 I go, πηγαίνω
 I go away, φεύγω
 I go down, κατεβαίνω
 I go out, βγαίνω
 I go up, ἀνεβαίνω
 gold, ὁ χρυσός
 good, καλός
 good-bye, ἀντίο, γεια σου

good morning, καλημέρα
 good night, καληνύχτα
 grace, ἡ χάρη
 grammar-school, τό γυμνάσιο
 grapes, τά σταφύλια
 great, μεγάλος
 Greece, ἡ Ἑλλάδα
 Greek, ἑλληνικός
 green, πράσινος
 greeting, ὁ χαιρετισμός
 grey, γκριζός
 guest, ὁ ξένος

H

hair, τὰ μαλλιά
 half, μισός
 hand, τό χέρι
 handbag, ἡ τσάντα
 happiness, ἡ εὐτυχία
 happy, εὐτυχής, εὐτυχισμένος
 harbour, τό λιμάνι
 hard, σκληρός
 hat, τό καπέλλο
 I have, ἔχω
 he, αὐτός
 head, τό κεφάλι
 I hear, ἀκούω
 heart, ἡ καρδιά
 heavy, βαρύνος
 help, ἡ βοήθεια
 I help, βοηθῶ
 here, ἐδῶ
 I hide, κρύβω, κρύβομαι
 history, ἡ ἱστορία
 holiday, ἡ ἐορτή
 home, τό σπίτι
 horizon, ὁ ὁρίζοντας
 hospital, τό νοσοκομεῖο
 hot, ζεστός
 hotel, τό ξενοδοχεῖο
 hour, ἡ ὥρα

house, τό σπίτι
 how, πῶς
 how much, πόσος
 a hundred, ἑκατό
 husband, ὁ ἀντρας

I

I, ἐγώ
 I immerse, βυθίζω
 important, σπουδαῖος
 in, μέσα
 in front, μπροστά
 in order to, γιά νά
 indispensable, ἀπαραίτητος
 information, ἡ πληροφορία
 I inquire, ρωτῶ
 inside, μέσα
 intelligent, ἐξυπνος
 I intend, σκοπεύω
 I invite, προσκαλῶ
 island, τό νησί, ἡ νήσος
 Italy, ἡ Ἰταλία

J

joke, τό ἀστεῖο
 journey, τό ταξίδι
 joy, ἡ χαρά

K

king, ὁ βασιλιάς
 kitchen, ἡ κουζίνα
 I know, ξέρω, γνωρίζω

L

I lack, στεροῦμαι
 lady, ἡ κυρία
 lamb, τό ἀρνάκι
 last, τελευταῖος

late, ἀργά
 I laugh, γελῶ
 laughter, τό γέλιο
 I learn, μαθαίνω
 left, ἀριστερός
 legend, ὁ θρύλος
 lesson, τό μάθημα
 I let, ἀφίνω
 letter, τό γράμμα
 level, τό ἐπίπεδο
 library, ἡ βιβλιοθήκη
 lie, τό ψέμα
 I lie down, ξαπλώνω
 life, ἡ ζωή
 lifeless, ψόφιος
 light, τό φῶς
 I light, ἀνάβω
 lighted, φωτισμένος
 like, σά
 lips, τὰ χέλη
 list, ὁ κατάλογος
 little, λίγος, μικρός
 I live, ζῶ
 living room, τό σαλόνι
 London, τό Λονδῖνο
 long, μακρός
 look, τό βλέμμα
 I look at, κοιτάζω
 I look for, γυρεύω, ζητῶ
 I lose, χάνω
 lost, χαμένος
 a lot, κάμποσος
 low, χαμηλός
 lucky, τυχερός

M

machine, ἡ μηχανή
 I make, κάνω
 man, ὁ ἄνθρωπος, ὁ ἀντρας
 many, πολλοί
 I marry, παντρεύομαι

match, τό σπρίτο
 it matters, πειράζει
 meal, τό φαγητό
 meaning, ή σημασία
 mechanic, ό μηχανικός
 I meet, συναντώ
 meeting, ή συγκέντρωση
 mental, πνευματικός
 I mention, αναφέρω
 merry, εύθυμος
 middle, μέσος
 million, τό εκατομμύριο
 millionaire, ό εκατομμυριούχος
 mine, δικός μου
 minute, τό λεπτό
 miracle, τό θαύμα
 Mr., ό κύριος
 Mrs., ή κυρία
 moment, ή στιγμή
 Monday, ή Δευτέρα
 money, τά λεφτά, τά χρήματα
 moon, τό φεγγάρι
 more, περισσότερος
 more (adv.), πιά
 morning, τό πρωί, τό πρωινό
 mother, ή μητέρα, ή μάνα
 motor-car, τό αυτοκίνητο
 mountain, τό βουνό
 I move, κινώ
 moving, συγκινητικός
 much, πολλές
 I murmur, μουρμουρίζω
 music, ή μουσική

N

name, τό όνομα
 napkin, ή πετσέτα
 naturally, φυσικά
 near, κοντά
 necessary, it is, πρέπει
 need, ή ανάγκη

neither . . . nor, ούτε . . . ούτε
 never, ποτέ
 nevertheless, όμως
 new, νέος, καινούριος
 news, τά νέα
 next, επόμενος, ερχόμενος
 nice, καλός, ώραιος
 Nicosia, ή Λευκωσία
 night, ή νύχτα
 night-club, τό καμπαρέ
 nine, εννιά
 nine hundred, εννιακόσιοι
 ninety, ενενήντα
 no, όχι
 no one, κανένας
 noiselessly, άθόρυβα
 noon, τό μεσημέρι
 northern, βόρειος, βορινός
 nothing, τίποτε

O

obliged, υπόχρεος
 of course, βέβαια, βεβαίως
 office, τό γραφείο
 officer, ό αξιωματικός
 often, συχνά
 old, παλιός
 one, ένας
 only, μόνο
 open, άνοιχτός
 opposite, απέναντι
 or, ή
 other, άλλος
 otherwise, άλλως
 out, έξω
 outing, ή εκδρομή
 outside, έξω
 oven, ό φούρνος
 overcoat, τό παλτό
 I owe, χρωστώ

P

packet, τό πακέτο
 pair, τό ζευγάρι
 paper, τό χαρτί
 parade, ή παράταξη
 paradise, ό παράδεισος
 party, τό πάρτυ
 I pass, περνάω
 pavement, τό πεζοδρόμιο
 I pay, πληρώνω
 I pay attention, προσέχω
 pearl, τό μαργαριτάρι
 pen, ή πένα
 penny, ή πέννα
 people, ό κόσμος
 perfect, τέλειος
 philosopher, ό φιλόσοφος
 photograph, ή φωτογραφία
 piano, τό πιάνο
 piercing, διαπεραστικός
 pilot, ό πιλότος
 pine-tree, τό πεύκο
 pity, τό κρίμα
 plate, τό πιάτο
 I play, παίζω
 pleasant, ευχάριστος
 pleased, ευχαριστημένος
 piece, τό κομμάτι
 poetic, ποιητικός
 point, τό σημείο
 I point at, δείχνω
 policeman, ό αστυφύλακας
 polite, ευγενής
 politeness, ή ευγένεια
 poor, φτωχός
 portion, ή μερίδα
 position, ή θέση
 postage-stamp, τό γραμμα-
 τόσημο
 potato, ή πατάτα
 pound (sterling), ή λίρα

I prefer, προτιμώ
 I prevent, εμποδίζω
 private, ιδιωτικός
 problem, τό πρόβλημα, τό
 ζήτημα
 I proceed, προχωρώ
 I promise, υπόσχομαι
 property, ή περιουσία
 proud, περήφανος
 pub, ή ταβέρνα
 pupil, ό μαθητής
 I put, βάζω

Q

quality, ή ποιότητα
 quarter, τό τέταρτο
 question, ή ερώτησις
 quick, γρήγορος
 quiet, ήσυχος
 quietness, ή ήσυχία

R

radio, τό ραδιόφωνο
 rather, μάλλον
 I reach, φτάνω
 I read, διαβάζω
 ready, έτοιμος
 reason, ό λόγος
 regular, κανονικός
 I remember, θυμάμαι
 rent, τό νοίκι
 I request, παρακαλώ
 I resemble, μοιάζω
 reserved, κρατημένος
 restaurant, τό εστιατόριο
 I return, γυρίζω
 ribbon, κορδέλλα
 rich, πλούσιος
 river, τό ποτάμι
 road, ό δρόμος

roast, ψητός
 roof, ή όροφή
 room, τό δωμάτιο
 round, γύρω
 row, σειρά
 I rub off, σβύνω
 I run, τρέχω

S

sad, λυπημένος
 salad, ή σαλάτα
 Salonica, ή Θεσσαλονίκη
 same, ίδιος
 Saturday, τό Σάββατο
 I say, λέγω
 sea, ή θάλασσα, ό γιαλός
 I search, ψάχνω
 season, ή εποχή
 second, δεύτερος
 I see, βλέπω
 I seem, φαίνομαι
 I send, στέλλω
 sentence, ή πρόταση
 series, ή σειρά
 serious, σοβαρός
 I set off, ξεκινώ
 seven, έπτά
 seven hundred, έφτακόσια
 seventy, εβδομήντα
 shady, σκιερός
 shilling, τό σελίνι
 ship, τό πλοίο, τό καράβι
 shoes, τά παπούτσια
 I show, δείχνω
 silent, σιωπηλός
 silk, τό μετάξι
 silly, ανόητος
 simple, άπλός
 since, άφού
 sincere, ειλικρινής
 I sing, τραγουδώ

single, μονός
 I sit, κάθομαι
 six, έξι
 six hundred, εξακόσιοι
 sixty, εξήντα
 sky, ό ουρανός
 sleep, ό ύπνος
 I sleep, κοιμάμαι
 slowly, σιγά, άργά
 small, μικρός
 smartness, ή κομψότητα
 smile, τό χαμόγελο
 I smile, χαμογελώ
 I smoke, καπνίζω
 so, έτσι, τόσο
 soldier, ό στρατιώτης
 some, λίγος, μερικοί
 someone, κάποιος
 something, κάτι
 sometime(s), κάποτε
 son, ό γυιός
 song, τό τραγούδι
 sorry, I am, λυπάμαι
 I speak, μιλώ
 special, ιδιαίτερος
 spectacle, τό θέαμα
 spectacles, τά γυαλιά
 speech, ό λόγος
 I spend, ξοδεύω
 I spoil, χαλώ
 I spread, απλώνω
 staircase, ή σκάλα
 I stand, στέκομαι
 standing, όρθιος
 star, τό άστρο, τό άστέρι
 I stay, μένω
 still, άκόμα
 I stop, σταματώ
 story, ή ιστορία
 straight on, ίσια
 strange, παράξενος
 stranger, ό ξένος

street, όδός, ή οδός
 I stress, τονίζω
 strong, δυνατός
 stupid person, ό βλάκας
 subject, τό θέμα
 suddenly, ξαφνικά
 summer, τό καλοκαίρι
 sun, ό ήλιος
 sunbathing, ή ήλιοθεραπεία
 Sunday, ή Κυριακή
 sure, βέβαιος
 surely, βέβαια
 surprise, ή έκπληξη
 sweet, γλυκός, γλυκός
 I swim, κολυμπώ

T

table, τό τραπέζι
 I take, παίρνω
 I take care, φροντίζω
 I take hold of, πιάνω
 talk, ή όμιλία
 I talk, μιλώ
 tall, ψηλός
 taxi, τό ταξί
 tea, τό τσάι
 tears, τά δάκρυα
 telephone, τό τηλέφωνο
 I telephone, τηλεφωνώ
 television, ή τηλεόρασις
 ten, δέκα
 I thank, εύχαριστώ
 that, εκείνος, ότι, πώς
 theatre, τό θέατρο
 then, τότε
 thick, πυκνός
 thin, λεπτός
 thing, τό πράγμα
 I think, νομίζω, θαρρώ, σκέφ-
 τομαι
 thirteen, δεκατρείς

thirty, τριάντα
 this, αυτός
 thought, ή σκέψη
 a thousand, χίλιοι
 three, τρεις
 three hundred, τριακόσιοι
 I throw, ρίχνω
 Thursday, ή Πέμπτη
 thus, έτσι
 tied, δεμένος
 till, ώς, ώσπου
 time, ό χρόνος, ή ώρα
 tired, κουρασμένος
 to, σε
 today, σήμερα
 together, μαζί
 tomorrow, αύριο
 tongue, ή γλώσσα
 tonight, άπόψε
 towards, προς
 town, ή πόλις
 train, τό τραίνο
 tree, τό δέντρο
 troubles, τά βάσανα
 I try, δοκιμάζω, προσπαθώ
 I turn, γυρίζω, στρίβω
 turning, τό στρίψιμο
 twelve, δώδεκα
 twenty, είκοσι
 two, δύο
 two hundred, διακόσιοι

U

ugly, άσχημος
 uncle, ό θείος
 I understand, καταλαβαίνω,
 αντιλαμβάνομαι
 uneasy, ανήσυχος
 unexpectedly, άπροσδόκητα
 unhappy, δυστυχισμένος
 University, τό Πανεπιστήμιο

unlikely, *ἀπίθανος*
 up, *πάνω*
 up to, *ὡς*
 useful, *χρήσιμος*
 usually, *συνήθως*

V

value, *ἡ ἀξία*
 various, *διάφοροι*
 veranda, *ἡ βεράντα*
 very much, *πάρα πολύ*
 village, *τό χωριό*
 Virgin Mary, *ἡ Παναγία*
 voice, *ἡ φωνή*

W

I wait, *περιμένω*
 waiter, *τό γκαρσόν*
 I wake up, *ξυπνῶ*
 I walk, *περπατῶ*
 I want, *θέλω*
 war, *ὁ πόλεμος*
 warm, *ζεστός*
 watch, *τό ρολόι*
 water, *τό νερό*
 way, *ὁ δρόμος*
 we, *ἐμεῖς*
 wealth, *ὁ πλοῦτος*
 weather, *ὁ καιρός*
 Wednesday, *ἡ Τετάρτη*
 week, *ἡ ἐβδομάδα*
 I weep, *κλαίω*
 what? *τί; ὅ, τι*
 when? *πότε;*
 whenever, *ὅποτε*
 where? *πού;*

where, *ὅπου*
 while, *ἐνῶ*
 whim, *ἡ ιδιοτροπία*
 who? *ποιός;*
 whole, *ὁλόκληρος, ὁλόκληρος,*
σωστός

why? *γιατί;*
 wide, *πλατύς*
 wife, *ἡ γυναῖκα*
 will, *ἡ θέλησις*
 I win, *νικῶ*
 window, *τό παράθυρο*
 wine, *τό κρασί*
 with, *μέ*
 without, *χωρίς*
 without fail, *ὁπωσδήποτε*
 woman, *ἡ γυναῖκα*
 wonderful, *θαυμάσιος*
 word, *ἡ λέξις*
 work, *ἡ δουλειά*

I work, *δουλεύω*
 worker, *ὁ ἐργάτης*
 world, *ὁ κόσμος*
 worried, *στενοχωρημένος*
 worse, *χειρότερος*
 worth, it is, *ἀξίζει*

I write, *γράφω*

Y

year, *ὁ χρόνος*
 yes, *ναί*
 yesterday, *χθές*
 yet, *ἀκόμα*
 you, *ἐσεῖς*
 young, *νέος*
 youth, *νέος, νεαρός*